

网络文学天下
—— 纵横中文网 ——
www.zongheng.com

御天神帝

1488-1489-1490-1491-1492
1493-1494-1495-1496-1497-1498-1499-1500-1501-1502

—— 乱世狂刀 © 著 ——

Imperial God Emperor

Chapters 121 - 160

Author: Warring Blades

Translation: [Aran Translations](#)

Publisher: [Yuki](#)

Table of Contents

1. [Chapter 121 – Chase](#)
2. [Chapter 122 – Human pill](#)
3. [Chapter 123 – The fourth Spirit spring](#)
4. [Chapter 124 – Sole will of the Heaven Earth Copper cauldron](#)
5. [Chapter 125 – Being kicked](#)
6. [Chapter 126 – I'll take revenge for them](#)
7. [Chapter 127 – Accordance Treasure](#)
8. [Chapter 128 – Path in Heaven that you didn't go](#)
9. [Chapter 129 – Flash](#)
10. [Chapter 130 – Lu Zhaoge](#)
11. [Chapter 131 - \[NO CHAPTER\]](#)
12. [Chapter 132 – Guerilla Warfare Officer](#)

13. [Chapter 133 – White Horse sword slave](#)
14. [Chapter 134 – Soldiers on duty](#)
15. [Chapter 135 – A technique that was invincible in theory](#)
16. [Chapter 136 – The person walking in the setting sun](#)
17. [Chapter 137 – Just who do you think you are?](#)
18. [Chapter 138 – Hang him for six hours](#)
19. [Chapter 139 – Suspicion](#)
20. [Chapter 140 – The notoriety of a tool](#)
21. [Chapter 141 – Let's negotiate](#)
22. [Chapter 142 – Two Great Lists](#)
23. [Chapter 143 – A place with many visitors](#)
24. [Chapter 144 – News regarding Li Shizen](#)
25. [Chapter 145 – Everything was slightly strange](#)

26. [Chapter 146 – Attempt to Spirit raise](#)
27. [Chapter 147 – Someone wants to see you](#)
28. [Chapter 148 – Drinking some tea and having a conversation](#)
29. [Chapter 149 – Will of the Martial path](#)
30. [Chapter 150 – Turning of the Snow dragon](#)
31. [Chapter 151 – Fate in the moonlit night](#)
32. [Chapter 152 – Return journey](#)
33. [Chapter 153 – Snow ground boar bat](#)
34. [Chapter 154 – White Horse battle armour](#)
35. [Chapter 155 – Demon race battleship](#)
36. [Chapter 156 – Bizarre matter](#)
37. [Chapter 157 – Yan Buhui](#)
38. [Chapter 158 – He stays behind](#)

39. [Chapter 159 – Scum](#)

40. [Chapter 160 – See you](#)

Chapter 121 – Chase

“So you people really were here ! ”

The lanky figure of Liu Yuancheng appeared with his long robe flapping and grey hair rustling. He walked step by step into the ice cave that was located underground.

He blocked the entrance, a strong yuan qi fluctuation burning around his body with snow and wind following him. His gaze like electricity. With just one glance, he was able to find Ye Qingyu. Cold sneering, “You really are a brat that is hard to deal with, to have hidden here. But it ends here.”

“So it really was you?” At this moment, Ye Qingyu was able to fully understand.

If it really was Liu Yuancheng behind the attacks, then everything that had happened before could be explained. At the very least, he had the ability to place spies in the [Breakthrough barracks], and was able to instruct the four military officers to assassinate him. And this [Snow ground dragon ape], was most likely the ferocious beast that this old bastard had raised.

“You should have long realised it was me.” Liu Yuancheng pressed forward step by step, a powerful aura that cause the flame on the torches to flicker and sway rapidly. The entire underground cave became many times dimmer. His murderous intent was like a real physical object: “Did you really think I was afraid of you? Did you really think I would let you

go? My Liu-er, was he killed by you?” “

Ye Qingyu remained silently for a breath of time. He knew that today could not end well.

Liu Yuancheng was the registrar of the city leader office. Not only was his position prestigious, but his personal strength could not be underestimated. He was absolutely not someone he could fight against currently.

“That’s right, Liu Lei was killed by me.” Ye Qingyu nodded his head. “Not raising him well, is the wrong of the father. To raise your son into such a calamity, he should have long been killed by someone else. He brought his thugs to kill me, and was instead killed by me instead. He deserved it.”

“Hahaha, you say he deserved it.” Liu Yuancheng began chuckling madly.

The laughter filled with sorrow and rage echoed throughout the icy cave.

“Today, I will kill you ten thousands time, and make you beg for life and death. I will make you regret have ever arrived to this world.” Liu Yuancheng was a like an enraged old lion.

Ye Qingyu had a faint smile. “If you want revenge, then just come. But this matter has nothing to do with the sentries. Let them go.”

“Childish.” Liu Yuancheng was a like a cat playing with a mouse, coldly sneering: “Why are you pretending to be a hero in front of me? Rotten retard! Would I let them live and allow them to become witnesses who will attest against me? Everyone that is with you today, needs to die too. You tell me to let them go, but I’ll instead slaughter them all instead. I’ll make you watch their death with your own eyes.”

Saying this, he casually swiped his arm.

An azure yuan qi surged out. Like a explosion of thunder, it exploded towards Yan Fan

A terrible yuan qi fluctuation.

Ye Qingyu had a scare, his figure flashing. Blocking in front of Yan Fan, both his fists struck out.

At this moment, the full power of Ye Qingyu exploded. The meridian around his back swelled, the bones and flesh shuddering. As if nine enormous dragons were migrating, there were the faint roar of dragons inside his body. His fist struck out, an uninterrupted snarl that met the azure lightning.

This was the most powerful strike that Ye Qingyu could produce.

Boom!

The green lighting was forcefully dispersed by this attack.

“Puk....Chi!”

Ye Qingyu opened his mouth and spat out a jet of blood. He was shaking as he flew back, landing on an ice wall ten metres of away. Accompanied by the sound of the impact, the ice walls collapsed. Half of Ye Qingyu’s body was covered.

“Superior?”

“Protect the superior!”

The sentries frantically ran towards Ye Qingyu, uncovering Ye Qingyu from the ice.

Ye Qingyu’s face was deathly pale, a scarlet red trace of blood on the corner of his lips. He could feel an acute and persisting pain in his body. His muscles and bones had gone soft and he had nearly lost all sensation in his body. He did not even have the energy to stand up anymore. This was especially so for his internal organs. As if it had been burnt by a scorching flame, it was so painful that Ye Qingyu could see golden stars.

“The inner organs has gotten displaced again before it could recover.....this will not end well.”

Ye Qingyu dripped cold sweat.

“So your body was suffering an injury already, hahahaha....” After a

slight surprise, Liu Yuancheng began laughing madly. “It really is according to Heaven’s will. It seems like that today is the day that you are fated to die in my hands.”

Ye Qingyu coldly snorted, struggling to stand up.

But his legs crumbled, the pain in his body making him nearly faint. He was not even able to stand stably.

“Ahaha, look at your crippled appearance. You still want to do battle with me?” Liu Yuancheng was venting the pent up wrath, feeling pleasure in this moment.

He had a face of contempt as he said: “I have seen far too many geniuses. After becoming dominant for a while, they don’t realise how high the Heavens are or how deep the Earth is and want to fight. But in the eyes of the older generation, they won’t even know how they died in their final moments. In Deer city, I have already endured for so many days. No matter how high your tail is raised, you will ultimately die in my hands.”

Ye Qingyu spat out a goblet of blood, biting his teeth and forcefully activating his inner yuan.

But in an instant, he could feel that the inner yuan in his body was in complete disarray, hard to control. Like steel needles, not the slightest degree of strength could be mustered by him.

“I’ll cover. Protect the superior, quickly go.”

Yan Fan placed Ye Qingyu on the back of one of the sentries. He himself madly screamed, unsheathing his long blade and charging towards Liu Yuancheng.

The sentries was blank for a moment, then let out a grievous roar. Without the slightest delay, they carried Ye Qingyu and left in the closest passageway.

“Old Yan, take care of yourself.”

“Boss Fan, we will still be brothers in the next life.”

The other sentries, did not turn their heads as they loudly screamed. They followed the armoured sentry into the corridors of the ice cave.

On their face, were steaming hot tears.

Each of them was clear, that the moment they turned around, they would say an eternal farewell.

But turning and fleeing at the first instance, was not because they feared for their lives.

As an soldier, sometimes there were times where you needed to do things more terrifying than death.

Yan Fan final strike was like a moth rushing to the flame. The reason

he did this was to struggle for ten breaths of time, to allow them to bring Ye Qingyu safely away.

This tacit understanding that did not need prior planning, was cultivated during these ten years of military life together.

The movements of the sentries were rapid and decisive. Even for an expert like Liu Yuancheng, he absolutely could not react. By the time he recovered, the four sentries had already carried Ye Qingyu into a ice passageway. In the blink of an eye, his figure could not be seen anymore.....

Yan Fan wielding the long blade, charged at him madly.

“Damn cripple, scram!”

Liu Yuancheng struck with his palm, yuan qi shooting out.

Green lightning tore apart space with a whistling sound.

Fan Yan completely could not evade before he was struck. The long blade in his hands was shattered, the broken blade exploding and embedding into his body. His figure was sent soaring away, and a palm print was shockingly evident was on his chest. His body was nearly completely pierced through by this palm strike.

Liu Yuancheng silhouette was quick as electricity, rushing towards that icy corridor.

But the moment he lifted his feet, he abruptly felt something constraining his leg.

Lowering his head to look, he saw the Yan Fan who had not yet died completely. Once again, he had inconceivably threw himself over. Both his arms were fiercely gripping the right leg of Liu Yuancheng, his facial features ferocious as he stalled for time.

“Idiot.”

Liu Yuancheng’s face darkened, his hand moving.

Boom!

The body of Yan Fan blew apart.

The light in the cave was particularly glaring to the eyes as the scarlet red blood and the white bones shattered and scattered in the ice cave.

But even if so, the last complete arm of this head of the watch post was still tightly gripping onto the leg of Liu Yuancheng. As if it was made of steel, the fingers even tore apart the clothing.

“Unlucky.”

Liu Yuancheng cursed. His leg faintly quivered, and then this arm was also scattered into flesh and bones.

After this slight stalling of time, the sentries had already ran to somewhere he could not see anymore.

“Hmph, lets just see where you can escape to.”

Liu Yuancheng coldly sneered, activating his inner yuan, his figure like lightning. He chased after into the icy passageway that Ye Qingyu and the others had disappeared into.

.....

“Let.....Let me down”

Ye Qingyu bit his teeth as he said these words.

He was enduring so that he did not shed tears.

In the moment that he saw Yan Fan dash out bravely with no thought to his own personal safety, Ye Qingyu was once again stunned by this leader of the sentries.

Even though they had only met for two days of time, but this was already not the first time that Ye Qingyu was astounded by these sentries. Without knowing why, Ye Qingyu could sense something special on the bodies of these soldiers that a normal person did not possess. Every time, it was able to give him a humongous impact.

“Superior, as long as the green mountain is still present, there is no need to worry about there not being enough firewood.” The armoured sentry gripped Ye Qingyu tightly.

The group did not tarry in the slightest

The terrain of the ice cave was tangled and complicated. Furthermore, the surface of the ground was also very slippery. Certain parts of the corridor was completely like a slide. The sentries carrying Ye Qingyu, directly slid through the icy terrain.

The rough and frantic breathing of the others, sounded in this silent and icy cave.

They did not know where the end of the ice cave was. They also did not know whether there was a path in front of them.

But evidently at this time, this was not the moment to ponder such questions.

The first thing they needed to do, was to escape the chase of Liu Yuancheng.

Otherwise, everything would be wasted.

Ye Qingyu struggled several times to get down from the back of the armoured sentry.

But the acute pain in his inner organs, made him unable to move. Originally his wounds was about to recover. But after receiving the strike of Liu Yuancheng, injury had stacked upon injury. It made his situation even more serious. He had basically lost all his ability to do battle.

Approximately ten minutes later.

The air in the corridor had already gradually began to turn thin.

This naturally formed underground labyrinth was as if it would never reach an end.

Another ten minutes later.

In front of then, a small scale space like that of an large stone house appeared.

In the walls of this space, there were tens of holes that were approximately two or three metre wide. It was so deep that one could not see the bottom. It was unknown where these holes led to.

It was another honeycomb like area.

The sentries slightly caught their breath in this icy area. A sentry soundlessly gave out several hand signals, and a faint smile was seen on the face of this sentry. Waving to the other people, he entered one of the icy holes, stopping two or three metres within the icy hole.

And the armoured sentry and his other companions, carried Ye Qingyu. They chose another icy corridor, rapidly entering deeply.

Ye Qingyu at this time, had already entered in a psuedo state of unconsciousness.

.....

A short while later, the figure of Liu Yuancheng came. Like the reaping Death god, he finally arrived in this honeycomb like ice area.

After sweeping his gaze around this environment, he hesitated slightly. He did not think that so many passageways would appear.

As he was about to closely observe and enter into one of the divergent corridors, he saw something. Abruptly, in the corner of his eyes he could see something flashing in one of the passageways to the left.. Liu Yuancheng shouted loudly. Without taking more time to think deeper, his figure transformed into a streak of light that chased towards the flash in that passageway.

“Just where are you running out, quickly scam out.”

His eyes was able to discern, that the figure running was namely one of the sentries. Liu Yuancheng was delighted.

But in this corridor, the ice floor was far too slippery He did not dare to put any force at all into his footsteps. Otherwise, if he managed to vibrate the icy walls enough, the entire passageway of the icy cave could collapse.

In this icy cave that extended who knows how deep underground, if it was destroyed then even he himself would be hard pressed to escape a sure death.

Because of this apprehension, during the rapid chase of Liu Yuancheng, there was no method that he could use to capture the sentry that was escaping and sliding away like a mouse.

“Looking to die!”

Liu Yuancheng became impatient.

After chasing for ten breaths of time, the sentry that was frantically escaping in front of him suddenly halted.

The distance between the two shortened constantly.

There was no longer any path left in the corridor. It had reached the end.

“Haha, why do you not run?” Liu Yuancheng pressed closer and closer, taking step after step forward. “Where’s the others? Where did Ye Qingyu go?”

The sentry turned back, looking at Liu Yuancheng

He was breathing roughly, sweat dampening his entire body. He had activated his inner yuan fully to escape, but in the end he was not Liu

Yuancheng's opponent.

But seeing the person whose strength was greater than him by who knows how many times, seeing this major player whose status was more prestigious than him many times over, the countenance of the soldier very quickly calmed down.

He stood silently where he was. Facing the enraged Liu Yuancheng, there was not the slightest trace of fear. In his eyes, there was only contempt and mockery. With both hands on his waist, he began chuckling loudly.

“What are you laughing at? You are asking to die! Quickly speak! Where are they?” Liu Yuancheng felt that something was not quite right.

“Why don't you guess.” The sentry winked.

Liu Yuancheng was taken aback.

And at this time, a bizarre energy, abruptly broke out from within the body of the sentry. As if it was the eruption of an volcano that could not be halted, it exploded.

Boom!

Self destruct.

Blood and flesh flew, white bone shattering.

A terrifying energy exploded towards all directions, bursting towards Liu Yuancheng.

Liu Yuancheng waved his hand, green yuan qi activating. Like a forcefield, it rebounded the fragments of white bones that shot towards to him.

“You deserve to die.” Liu Yuancheng was both shocked and angry.

He was not an idiot. He very quickly understood that he had fallen into their scheme.

The sentry had led him here, and the others must have brought Ye Qingyu to escape into another corridor.

However, as he was angry, Liu Yuancheng also felt a deep unrest and shock.

He had occupied a high position for a very long time. In normal days, he would often interact with the elegant high class nobilities, and he had seen many geniuses in his time. Because his eyes were higher than the crown of his head, low class martial artists and soldiers were an existence that did not enter into his consideration at all.

In the eyes of Liu Yuancheng, these soldiers were like ants. Stupid and vulgar, extremely dirty, they only had possessed a cheap life. They were only something of value if they could be of use to him.

But today, he witnessed these low class martial artists that he looked down on, surprising him. Time and time again, they made him return without any achievement whatsoever.

Liu Yuancheng could not help but admit that even he was moved.

The lowly soldiers that in his eyes that were not even worth a single ounce, would show such bravery. They did not fear death in the slightest.

He stood where he was, silent for ten breaths of times. Then he returned to the original route.

Very quickly, he once again returned to that honeycomb like room.

Amongst the tens of icy corridors, after a detailed examination, he finally discovered some traces of Ye Qingyu and the others . He continued to chase on.

.....

An hour later.

A similar incident occurred yet again.

“Speak, just where had Ye Qingyu gone?” Liu Yuancheng had chased the sentry to where he had nowhere else he could go.

“Peh.” The sentry spat out a mouthful of saliva, unsheathing the long blade at his waist. His face was ferocious as he charged forwards and he swung his blade through the air.

Liu Yuancheng faintly swiped his arm across.

A ray of green yuan qi struck out like thunder.

The long blade in the hands of the soldier shattered. His figure was sent flying back, landing on the ice wall. Every bone in his body shattered into who knows how many pieces.

“Speak, and I’ll give you a quick death. If you don’t say, I’ll make you have a fate worse than death.”

Liu Yuancheng was enraged to the extreme. The sinister light in his eyes was flickering. His entire person was like a volcano that was about to erupt, gloomy and dreadful.

“Haha, hahaha.....” The soldier laid in the pool of his own blood. He could not move in the slightest, but he emitted a forced laugh. “Come, come, come, come and try. What ever method you have, just try it. Lets see if your grandfather I will let out even a single sound to beg for mercy.”

Liu Yuancheng was enraged.

Lifting his hand, a powerful yuan qi surged out. In a split second, it turned everything below the sentry’s waist into meat paste.

Who would have guessed, that the sentry did not even look. He lay silently on the ground, a faint smile on his face as he looked at the arch of the icy ceiling. He said in a low voice, “Brother Yan, wait for me under there. Don’t make me lonely on the yellow river road.....”

Liu Yuancheng was taken aback.

His fingers flicked out.

A gust of wind rushed out, piercing through the head of the sentry’s head.

Ultimately, he had given the sentry a painless death.

Because through such a demonstration, Liu Yuancheng already understood that the sentry had long embraced death. Even if he used the cruellest of torture on his body, it was no use. It was just a waste of time.

Apart from being angered, in the depths of Liu Yuancheng’s heart, he was ultimately somewhat impressed by these lowly soldiers.

“Just what kind of method did Ye Qingyu use, that these soldiers would be so hell bent on saving him?”

Liu Yuancheng could not understand.

He turned and left in another corridor.

.....

.....

“Who are you?”

Ye Qingyu looked at the black robed man in front of him.

He had finally recovered slightly, and could barely walk.

And beside him, there was only the armoured sentry left.

Previously to delay the chase of Liu Yuancheng, they had volunteered to stay behind. Time and time again, they had diverted Liu Yuancheng. This held no difference to staying and dying.

Ye Qingyu once again hated the pain of being so weak.

He had long regarded these sentries like his family.

But he was forced to watch as they were slaughtered, with nothing he could do.

Strong!

I need to become powerful.

Ye Qingyu had never wished for power like he did now.

But first, he had to live on.

He endured his sorrow, not turning around to attack Liu Yuancheng. With the support of the last armoured sentry, he had finally escaped from this place.

Who would have thought, that a black robed person would appear and block his path.

“Who are you?” Ye Qingyu asked.

“A person that has always been very interested in you.” The voice of the black robed person was so low, that it was as if it came from his chest. But unquestionably, his strength was terrifying. It was tens of times greater than Liu Yuancheng, because Ye Qingyu was able to feel, a suffocating pressure he had never experienced before.

This was a terrifying expert.

And he was an enemy and not a friend.

“So you’ve managed to escape to here. to protect you, the little ants has really all died. A pity, ‘the ordinary man is innocent, but treasuring a jade ring can become a crime.’” The black robed man cackled, stretching out

his hand. “Fine, hand it over.”

Ye Qingyu was blank: “Hand what over?”

“If you hand over the treasure on you, I could possibly not kill you. I’ll give you a chance to live on.” The black robed man laughed strangely. “If you can escape from the chase of Liu Yuancheng, then you can live on.”

Chapter 122 – Human pill

“First let him go.”

Ye Qingyu pointed towards the armoured sentry next to him.

The black robed figure gave an indifferent gesture.:”Sure.” Again to the armoured sentry. “Fine, you can scam now.

The armoured sentry hesitated, looking towards Ye Qingyu.

“Go.” Ye Qingyu let out a bitter chuckle. “Brother, you must live on to let the others know, just what has happened in the fifty sixth watch post. Proclaim the fearless deeds of brother Yan Fan and the others to everyone. Make them know, just what is the dignity and honour of the sentries. ”

The gaze of the armoured sentinel, hesitated for a brief moment.

But in the next split second, his gaze once again became determined yet again.

“No, I cannot go.” The armoured sentry straightened his body, unsheathing the standard long blade at his waist. Blocking in front of Ye Qingyu, he said in a determined voice: “Big brother Yan told me to protect superior. Even if I die, I cannot even retreat one step. And as for the dignity and honour of the sentries, this is fought for using blades and spears and not by announcing. As long as we are able to achieve it, even

if no one else knows, we can have a clear conscience.”

Ye Qingyu immediately had no words to say.

The black robed figure remained quiet as he watched this scene.

He was not impatient, nor did he hurry them.

Evidently from his perspective, everything was already in his control and within his grasp. After waiting for so many days, he was not impatient about this little delay.

“Just what kind of treasure do you want?” Ye Qingyu looked at the black robed figure. After thinking, he summoned the Little Shang sword, the autumn water of the blade brightening up the dim environment of the cave. There was a strange chill. Ye Qingyu took a step forward. “This sword? Fine, I’ll give it to you.”

The black robed man let out a short laugh. “A poor Spirit weapon. How could it enter my eyes?”

Ye Qingyu thought for a while, then brought out the glutton Big Head from within his chest. “Could it be him?”

The silly dog silently lay on Ye Qingyu’s palm. It seemed as if Big Head had eaten too much. He seemed to have entered a state of deep hibernation.

The black robed man remained silent for a short time.

Then in his voice, became somewhat angered. “Ye Qingyu, my patience is extremely limited. Don’t use such a stupid method, to provoke my bottom line time and time again.”

Ye Qingyu stuffed Big Head back into his chest.

After thinking for a while, he finally understood just what the black robed man had came for.

After hesitating for a brief second , he summoned the bronze book, [Titled Fiendgod chart] from his sea of consciousness. Placing it in his hand, “Fine, this should be what you have been wanting. Take it away, but, I need you to save him.” Ye Qingyu pointed at the armoured sentry beside him.

He very much did not want to part with it.

But there was no other way.

Ye Qingyu knew the full value of this bronze book, [Titled Fiendgod chart] – it held practically no difference from a legendary martial storehouse. Ye Qingyu had already benefited greatly by only unlocking a tiny part of the contents. By handing over this bronze book, perhaps it was tantamount to giving up the opportunity to become a peerless expert.

Because of his situation, even if Ye Qingyu would die, he needed to fight for it.

Even if he died, he would absolutely not hand over the Bronze book.

But right now, next to him, there was still the armoured sentry.

The sentries had already sacrificed too much for him. Ye Qingyu did not wish for anyone else to die for him.

But——

“Hahaha, are you pretending to be crazy.” The black robed figure began to shake with a low laugh. Within the laughter, there was type of omen contained with that seemed to signal the eruption of the volcano. “It seems like my manner was too friendly, that you would dare to act so recklessly. This is the last time I will ask. Will you hand it over or not?”

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

Could it be this black robed figure did not come for the bronze book [Titled Fiendgod chart]?

However apart from these items, on his body, could there be any other objects that could be counted as ‘treasures’?

The armoured sentry also stared with shock at Ye Qingyu.

He did not understand why he would tell the other party to take away his treasure when he was obviously empty handed.

Could he be intentionally playing with and teasing the black robed figure?

But no matter in what situation, superior Ye was the one in the right. Since he was the owner of the heroic military medal, then even if he sacrificed his life to protect him, it was worth it. Because every soldier understood what the military medal represented. To be able to obtain a military medal, at the very least they had done a great deed like saving an army of tens of thousands in number and turning the tide of battlefield. Just for this point alone, was enough for any soldier to feel that it was worth dying for.

And at this time, the armoured sentry did not feel nervous anymore.

He deeply breathed in, gathering energy, making preparations for his last battle.

“Just what kind of treasure do you want?” Ye Qingyu waved the bronze book [Titled Fiendgod chart] in his hand, angrily saying.

The black robed man did not reply.

A shred of black yuan qi fluctuation, began to surge out from within his body.

A terrifying aura, made Ye Qingyu and the armoured sentry sense suffocation. They could not gather the intention to resist at all。

“It seems like you won’t cry until you see the coffin. ” The black robed man advanced step by step.

Ye Qingyu was enraged, about to say something, when a ray of light flashed in his mind. He turned to look over at the armoured sentry, then looked at the expression of the black robed figure, suddenly realising an inconceivable fact———

They could not see the bronze book.

No wonder.

The moment Ye Qingyu had summoned the bronze book, he had already made the preparations to let it go. He did not imagine that such a result would occur.

The secrets on the [Titled Fiendgod chart] were really far too many. It seems right now, only he was able to see it. Apart from himself, even experts like the black robed man apart from not seeing it, he could not even sense its existence.

This should have been a great and positive discovery.

He did not have to worry about the bronze book being stolen away in the future.

But right now, this was absolutely a great misfortune.

The black robed figure could not see the bronze book, and thought Ye Qingyu was playing with him. Under his rage, he was about to rise and attack.

What should he do?

Ye Qingyu began to panic.

The next instant , the armoured sentry had already made Ye Qingyu's choice for him.

“Die ! ”

This sentry let out a low bellow, both hands gripping his long blade. Like a cheetah that slunk out, he charged towards the black robed man.

“Superior, quickly run.” The sentry madly screamed.

Ye Qingyu did not run.

Because the strength of the black robed was far too powerful. He could not escape at all.

“Jie Jie Jie Jie.....” A gloomy owl like hoot of laughter sounded. The black robed figure only lightly flicked his sleeve, then the armoured sentry was as if he was struck by an battering ram. He spurted with blood as he soared backwards. Every inch of the long blade had shattered, and there were constant sounds of bones fracturing and breaking within his

body. In his entire skeleton, there was already likely not to be one intact bone within.

Ye Qingyu loudly exhaled, stretching his hand out and catching the armoured sentry.

“Superior.....” The sentry was having his last moment of lucidity prior to his death. A faint and calm smile was on his face. “I did not lose the face of brother Yan and the others. I protectedthe dignity of the sentries and.....and glory.”

Ye Qingyu hissed through his teeth with sorrow, hatred and madness.

He hated that the fact that this sentry was on the cusp of his death, but he did not possess the power to change anything.

“Superior.....I.....I have a little brother, in Youyan pass.....called.....called.....Ye Congyun, He.....he.....” As the sentry said this, two jets of blood suddenly spat from his mouth. The inner organs in disarray was shattering, and his body began twitching.

Ye Qingyu understood the meaning in his words.

“Rest assured, when I reach Youyan pass, I will definitely find him. I will definitely protect him. You can rest assured.....I swear.” Ye Qingyu made an oath, fighting against the mourning in his heart.

The armoured sentry passed away.

He was the youngest sentry in the group.

To do his duty, to protect his honour, he had died.

Ye Qingyu embraced the young corpse, speechless for a while. Then he abruptly howled to the heavens. Black hair badly standing up, the inner yuan flowing in his body madly activated. Withstanding the pain like being stabbed by ten thousand needles, he madly charged towards the black robed figure.....

The black robed figure flicked his hands.

Boom!

An explosion sounded to his ears.

Ye Qingyu could feel a burst at the pit of his stomach and a sweetness at the back of his throat. His entire body flew out.

This was his last conscious thought.

Then he fainted.

.....

.....

Who knows how long after.

Ye Qingyu gradually awakened.

His body was as if it was bathed in hot spring, a warm sensation constantly able to be felt. There was a hard to describe comfortable feeling, as if he had once again returned to the amniotic fluids of his mother. This was a natural sensation, profound and mysterious. At this moment, Ye Qingyu could hardly describe it.

He struggled to shake his head, to allow his thoughts to become clearer.

What had happened?

Just where was this place?

Was I not killed by the black robed man?

Ye Qingyu was filled with questions.

The surroundings was completely dark, and he himself was as if was immersed in some sort of liquid. This feeling was extremely bizarre.

I did not die?

Could I be saved by someone?

What made him even more shocked, was that his injuries seemed to be almost fully recovered. His inner organs was not painful anymore, and his inner yuan flowed much more smoothly.

At this time——

“Haha, you’ve awakened?”

A familiar voice, was transmitted into his ears.

It was the voice of the black robed man.

Ye Qingyu shivered, suddenly realising that he had oversimplified matters.

“Just where I am?” Ye Qingyu loudly screamed.

He discovered, that his hands and feet could not move in the slightest.

The liquid in this space, had a bizarre and horrifying pressure, that fixed him stably in this place. There was a sensation like sitting and meditating.

“Don’t be afraid, you are in a very safe place right now.” In the voice of the black robed man, there was a ridicule that made one quiver. “A little

mouse like you, is not honest in the slightest. Since you won't hand over the treasure on you, then I can only switch to a different method to deal with you."

Ye Qingyu felt his blood run cold.

"I did not think, I did not think, I really did not think that a little brat like you has the rare [Holy body of the dragon's blood]. In your body, there is the blood of the holy dragon flowing within. Hahaha, the [Holy body of the dragon's blood], has already been extinguished for thousands of years, to be found by me. This is really an unexpected and pleasant surprise." The voice of the black robed man had excitement and delight contained within.

"Holy body of the dragon's blood? Just what is this? In my body, just why would there be the blood of the holy dragon?"

Ye Qingyu suddenly felt somewhat nonplussed and confused.

He continued to hear the mad laughter of the black robed man as he continued speaking: "As the saying goes, 'to lose at sunrise, but gain at sunset'¹. Haha, heavens is not treating me too badly. Haha, not being able to obtain the treasure is fine. After I have refined you into a [Human pill] and ingest this pill, this can add five hundred years to my longevity. It will be enough for me to recover my youthful vigour. Haha, this is an opportunity that is even rarer than any treasure!

The delighted chuckle of the black robed man resounded from all directions.

Then Ye Qingyu suddenly felt a brightness above his head.

Light shined in.

The excited and sinister smile of the black robed man, appeared from above him.

Borrowing the light, Ye Qingyu carefully observed. He discovered that he was confined within a two person tall copper ancient cauldron.

1. compensated for his earlier loss ↵

Chapter 123 – The fourth Spirit spring

On the lid of the brass cauldron that was one metre in diameter, there were indistinct engravings of birds and animals. They should be organisms of the distant past. The decorative design fluctuated with a strange beauty, whirling and rotating floating above the cauldron and letting out strange “chi, chi” sounds.

The pill cauldron that Ye Qingyu was located in was copper in colour, flickering and glimmering with the light.

His entire body was stuffed in the pill cauldron.

The space inside the pill cauldron was exceedingly spacious, but there was a pale yellow liquid within the inside of the cauldron. Everything below Ye Qingyu’s head was immersed in this body of liquid. There was a sensation similar to that of being prepared inside a medicinal wine.

It was unknown as to just what exactly the pale yellow liquid was. The liquid seemed to emit a faint fragrance. If one examined carefully, the yellow water seemed to be composed of all kinds of different ingredients with the discernible smell of Spirit herbs and precious medicines contained within.

“Haha, I understand now. It seems like the outside world has been misled. The reason that you were in the spotlight during the [Boundary canyon battlefield], was not because that you had a treasure on your body, but the [Holy body of the dragon’s blood].” The voice of the black robed man that came from outside the cauldron held a hard to disguise

excitement. “But this is even better. For me, to refine a holy body of the human race into a human pill, is absolutely much better than whatever treasure, hahaha.....”

Ye Qingyu struggled for a moment.

His body quivered, but it was hard to break through the strange energy constraining him.

But it caused the pale yellow liquid to splash about, with some entering his mouth that caused him to choke.....

“Haha, don’t hurry. It needs a total of nine days for the pill to be created. If you will is determined enough, than you can last for another six or seven days at least. Haha.” The voice of the black robed man seemed incomparably sinister. “Don’t fear, the hundred grass divine liquid within the cauldron is made from forty nine different types of Spirit herbs. It absolutely could be counted as a rare treasure. Did you know, that for a normal person to obtain even a drop of this divine liquid they have to pay a huge price? Right now, I am submerging your entire body inside. This can be counted as your good fortune, hahaha!”

Very quickly, Ye Qingyu was able to sense the inner temperature of the cauldron beginning to rise.

The yellow [Hundred grass divine liquid] began to emit a pale golden radiance, escaping from the gap at the top of the cauldron.

The medicinal fragrance inside the cauldron became more and more

concentrated.

Ye Qingyu could not move in the slightest.

But when he swallowed in the fragrance emitting from the [Hundred grass divine liquid], he would have a feeling where he felt peaceful and at ease. The injuries inside his body were recovering at a noticeable speed. The hidden injuries in his flesh and bones began to disappear and the inner yuan that was in disarray gradually began to stabilise.

Ye Qingyu's heart moved.

He did not resist anymore, silently practicing the nameless heart sutra, breathing in and out. He began absorbing the medicinal power of the [Hundred grass divine liquid] of his own initiative.

He would first treat his injury, then think of a way to escape.

The yellow lid of the cauldron rotated, whirling and spinning like a golden disk. The patterns of the birds and beasts already had no way to be seen. The golden dense mist did not have a way of surging out of the cauldron through the lid anymore. Instead, the steam rotated along with the lid, vaguely turning into a chaotic state. As more and more gathered below the lid of the cauldron, it once again condensed and returned to within the cauldron.

Perhaps it was because his mood was good, but the black robed man said many things.

“I originally came to Deer city for another matter. Who would have guessed that matter would not succeed, but instead I would discover an unexpected harvest like you.....” The black robed man could not disguise his excited countenance.

With his age and experience, to lose his composure and become so excited, one was able to determine just how valuable the [Human Pill of Dragon blood] was

“Haha, do you feel your entire body is in a great state right now, and that your injuries are very quickly recovering?”

“This is because the [Hundred grass divine liquid] is healing your injuries and changing the composition of your body. Haha, did you know, to distil and create this hundred grass divine liquid, I have spent an entire hundred years of time. I’ve went over mountains and rivers, to gather the needed ingredients for this medicinal formula. Originally, it was intended to extend my life, but this time it will benefit a little brat. Haha!”

“I guess what you’re doing right now, is that you’re doing your best to absorb the [Hundred grass divine liquid] to recover from your injuries and raise your strength? You want to escape from the cauldron, is that correct?”

“Don’t dream. The [Cloud top cauldron] is something that I obtained fifty years ago from the excavating lands within an ancient relic. The wonders are endless. There has never been anything that is able to escape from the copper cauldron. Just give up. It is only through relying on the [Cloud top cauldron] did I receive the outstanding title of the [Pill king of Azure Phoenix]. “

The black robed man seemed as if he had suddenly transformed into a chattering machine, incessantly speaking.

Ye Qingyu was immediately taken aback.

“[Pill king of Azure Phoenix]? You are the Elder Chen that brought the expedition party from Azure Phoenix academy to White Deer academy?” Ye Qingyu opened his mouth and asked his question.

The black robed figure voice suddenly halted in his monologue.

After a short while, he abruptly began laughing crazily. “What does it matter if you know, as you are very quickly going to become a dead person. That’s right, I am the Chen Moyun of Azure Phoenix academy. Since you now know my name, then you can give up honestly, and die as a ghost that understands everything. This can be counted as your fortune.”

Ye Qingyu did not say anything.

The [Pill king of Azure Phoenix], Chen Moyun, really was a famous and glorious title.

It was said that this person’s not only possessed great strength but he was also a high class pill master. It was said that his skills in refining pills had reached perfection and he had a vast circle of friends. He held great prestige amongst the ten academies. Many experts of the Bitter Sea stage had once begged him to refine pills for them. Within the Azure

Phoenix academy, his status was even higher than those that possessed greater strength than him.

The reputation of this person was extremely high.

Who would have thought, that he would perform such a deed here.

Hon Kong had once reminded Ye Qingyu, that if he decided to go to Azure Phoenix academy, he must be wary of Elder Chen. It seems like Hon Kong should have discovered something about Elder Chen. Ye Qingyu had rejected the offer to go to Azure Phoenix academy, and originally thought he would have no interaction with this person. Who would have thought that this Chen Moyun would be so malicious and crafty, to have sneakily followed his tracks.

At this time, countless thoughts flashed by in Ye Qingyu's mind.

But very quickly, he understood that now was not the time to ponder such matters. Immediately he concentrated, not paying attention to outside matters anymore. Activating the nameless heart sutra, he did his best to recover from his wounds.

Time passed by quickly.

In the blink of an eye, one day and one night had already passed.

The temperature of the copper cauldron became extremely high.

The hundred grass divine liquid had completely boiled, gurgling and surging. The golden stream it emitted became more and concentrated. Within the space of the cauldron, nothing could be seen anymore.

The clothes on Ye Qingyu, had already been completely dissolved. He was naked as he was bathed in this boiling divine liquid.

Thankfully, with the toughness of his current physical body it was not too big a problem to resist against this kind of temperature.

And at this time, Ye Qingyu's wounds had already fully recovered.

He attempted to break past the seal of the cauldron and escape out of the pill cauldron, but he was not successful.

The seal of the pill cauldron was far more terrifying than what Ye Qingyu had imagined.

“What can I do? Could it really be that I will die here?”

Ye Qingyu's brain quickly flickered.

“No matter what, I must live on.” At this moment, Ye Qingyu thought of very many people. Familiar face after familiar face flashed by in his mind.

He thought of his parents long asleep in the ground. He thought of the last words of his father, telling him to go to the royal court of Snow

country to take back something that belong to him. He thought back to the death of his parents, that the truth had not yet been discovered behind their deaths. He thought back to the deathly pale face of the little loli Song Xiaojun and the smile of the sword immortal Wang Jianru. He thought of Yan Fan and the sentries that had charged forward without any complaints.....

His originally hesitant heart, in this process, slowly became more and more determined.

Even if not for himself, but for people who died for him, for people who would miss him, he must live on.

Ye Qingyu's heart gradually became clear.

He did not think muddled thoughts anymore, concentrating fully. Using the nameless heart sutra, he continued to absorb the medicinal power of the hundred grass divine liquid, transforming it into yuan qi that nourished him. His inner yuan under the medicinal power of the liquid and the cauldron, incessantly continued to rise.....

In the blink of an eye, another day had passed.

In total, Ye Qingyu had been cooking within the cauldron for a total of two days and two nights.

A little more than a quarter of the hundred grass divine liquid in the pill cauldron had already been absorbed by him.

Within the dantian world in his body, clouds and mist was surging. The fourth yuan qi kindling had already reached a state of completion. Ye Qingyu borrowed the power of the hundred grass divine liquid within the cauldron to open the fourth Spirit spring.....

Time passed second by second.

Ye Qingyu's consciousness, completely became immersed within the world in his dantian.

He did not know just how much time had passed.

Boom!

A yuan qi spring, in a split second soared through the skies from the yellow sands in his dantian world. Like a jade dragon water pillar, it snaked through the air. Ultimately it transformed into a large swathe of yuan qi rain that crashed down, nourishing the desert thousands of metres around it.

The fourth spirit spring.

Success!

This was far sooner than the time Ye Qingyu had originally estimated.

After careful consideration, this should be due to the [Cloud top cauldron] as well as the [Hundred grass divine liquid] -- especially the

latter. The liquid contained a large quantity of the essence of herbs and medicines. It was absorbed by Ye Qingyu into his body and transformed into yuan qi energy. Therefore, in such a short amount of time, he was able to reach the requirements to excavate the fourth Spirit spring.

Entering the stage of the four Spirit spring, had raised Ye Qingyu's power to an entirely different level.

An extremely powerful feeling, coalesced around Ye Qingyu.

He once again tried to break free from the restraints of the pill cauldron.

But he once again dejectedly found that the constraint was still effective. He still could not break apart the seal of the [Cloud top cauldron]. But his body was at least able to move a little. He was no longer in a state where he could not move and was in a meditative stance.

Ye Qingyu did not panic.

At this time, he activated the bronze book, [Titled Fiendgod chart]

Every time he excavated a Spirit spring, the [Titled Fiendgod chart] would appear and completely absorb the inner yuan. After purifying it, the bronze book would return it. And after this process, new contents and pages would be unlocked in the ancient bronze book. New techniques or objects would be provided.

The four moves of the golden armoured king as well as the four moves of the unmatched general, was obtained by Ye Qingyu from the bronze book.

This time, the reaction of the bronze book was no different.

Chapter 124 – Sole will of the Heaven Earth Copper cauldron

In a split second, the ancient bronze book activated and flickered with a light. Like previous times, it began madly absorbing Ye Qingyu's inner yuan with extreme speed. Ye Qingyu was nearly completely sucked dried by the bronze book. In only a few seconds time, Ye Qingyu's inner body was in a bizarre state of near dehydration.

To establish again after destruction.

Ye Qingyu struggled to maintain his consciousness. He waited for the repayment of the bronze book that would appear.

But this time, a slight change happened.

After ten minutes had passed, the expected repayment had still not manifested.

The bronze book was still sucking away the yuan power within Ye Qingyu's body.

However, this type of absorption was evidently much slower and gentle than previously. It maintained a special rhythm, not exploding in an instant and turning Ye Qingyu into a dehydrated person.

Ye Qingyu did not become panicked.

Because he had already realised the reason why such a situation would appear. It was because the hundred grass divine liquid was constantly restoring the energy within his body by its medicinal properties. And the bronze book seemed to be particularly interested in this energy, slowly absorbing it.

Ye Qingyu's body, was as if it had become a point of conduit.

After passing through his body, the medicinal power of the hundred grass divine liquid entered into the Bronze book.

This type of process, continued on for one day and night.

Then the bronze book seem to grow tired of using this method to absorb the hundred grass divine liquid. It stopped sucking the energy in. Tens of breath later, there was an incomparably pure yuan qi that surged out from the bronze book. In an instant, it had flowed throughout Ye Qingyu's meridians and his bones and limbs. As if rivers returning to the sea, the streams converged in the desert of the dantian world and flowed into the four Spirit spring.

The long awaited repayment had finally occurred.

Ye Qingyu immediately became as lively as a tiger or a dragon.

This new power made him feel like as if he was reborn.

Inner yuan fluctuated around his meridians and with body. Ye Qingyu was immediately able to feel the pressure constraining him lessen by a large margin. He attempted to move his arms and legs and was finally able to stretch out his body within the [Cloud top cauldron]. His figure became much more relaxed.

But he was still trapped and could not escape.

The copper lid of the [Cloud top cauldron] had already fallen, sealing the entire pill cauldron.

A vast and deep energy, enveloped the interior of the cauldron. This was especially so for the copper lid that was engraved with the images of birds and beasts. On the lid, there was a strange light pattern fluctuating, as if it was alive. It emitted a strange energy, as if it was the world itself. It gave a feeling that even if your strength was greater still, you would not be able to break apart this world.

Ye Qingyu attempted several times, but was not able to open the copper cauldron.

Dong!Dong !

There was suddenly the sound of someone knocking on the cauldron.

It was someone banging on the outside.

“How is it? Three days and three nights has already passed, could it be that you have already been refined to death?” The voice of the black

robed man came from outside.

At this time, Ye Qingyu was not particularly anxious, assuming the stance of a hoodlum and laughed in contempt. “I peh, you hypocrite that angle for fame. Slowly refine outside, even if you get tired to death, I won’t be smelted to death. If you have the abilities, than come inside and lets fight.”

There was a brief silence outside.

And then the voice of the black robed man that seemed to be consumed by both fury and laughter sounded yet again. “Good, very good. It seems like you still have energy. These three days of time is just the appetiser. The next six days will be enough for you to suffer. At that time, I will wait for you to beg for my mercy.”

As he finished, he continued to maintain the cauldron and beginning the refinement process once again.

Ye Qingyu immediately sensed the temperature of the cauldron rapidly rising.

Even with Ye Qingyu’s current strength, he was able to feel a torrid heat that was hard to endure.

It was if he was bathed within lava.

The hundred grass divine liquid, was once again absorbed by Ye Qingyu. There was only two thirds left behind.

Ye Qingyu could not think of a solution to his crisis at this very moment so crisply decided to sit in a meditative position. Putting aside all distractions, he continued to train.

In the blink of an eye, another day had passed.

The hundred grass divine liquid became more and more violent. Under the high temperature, a large quantity had already turned into gas. The liquid transformed into golden steam that coalesced within the pill cauldron.

Ye Qingyu did not have to spend any effort whatsoever to absorb the hundred grass divine liquid. Just by inhaling and exhaling, there would be the purest herbal Spirit qi that entered into his body. At this moment, even every single pore on his body were absorbing the energy of the herbs.

Ye Qingyu had a feeling that he was about to become a medicinal human.

He had an illusion, that if a martial expert just took a bite out of him and ate a piece of his flesh, their strength would greatly increase.

“Haha, little thing, do you feel that your entire body is entirely free from injuries? How is the absorption of the energy from the medicine?” The voice of the black robed man came from outside the cauldron, containing ridicule but also a sinisterness. He said: “Obediently, quickly absorb all the remaining medicinal energy. Only then can I proceed on with the next step of the refinement, ahahahahah.....”

“Old bastard, to want to refine me into a human pill. I fear you don’t have the appetite for it.” Ye Qingyu loudly yelled. “If you have the guts, then quickly do it.”

“Haha, when a dead duck is cooked, the beak is still hard.....there will be a time when you will cry.” The black robed man let out an angry grunt, not say anything anymore.。

What he should be doing right now was doing his utmost to activate the cauldron for refinement with his inner yuan.

As expected, Ye Qingyu once again felt the inner temperature of the cauldron rapidly rising. This time, there was not much difference from being directly roasted on the fire.

“This bastard is really too malicious. His plan is to make me completely absorb the medicinal power of the hundred grass liquid and becoming a medicine man. Then he will refine me into a human pill.” Ye Qingyu racked his brains for a solution. But right now, apart from using the medicinal liquid to raise his strength, he seemed to not have any other choice. He could only continue, and take things step by step.

Ye Qingyu on resisted against the heat of the cauldron while he diverted another part of his consciousness to observe the interior of the cauldron.

He wanted to find something within the cauldron, some information that he could utilise.

Chen Moyun had obtain this cauldron named the [Cloud top cauldron] from ancient ruins. This meant that this cauldron was not created by his own hands. He may not have completely grasped and controlled the secrets of this cauldron. Perhaps there were some aspects that Chen Moyun had neglected that could be of use for Ye Qingyu.

He comforted himself just like this.

Ye Qingyu examined the walls of the cauldrons.

As expected, he very quickly discovered many engravings and images in the style of the far ancient ages. They were different from the bird and beasts engraved on the copper lid. These engravings were mainly about the different characters in the pictures as well as the narrative of a tale. There were also some strange characters inscripted on the walls that Ye Qingyu counted carefully. In total, there were a hundred and eight characters, tight and clustered. It made one feel slightly dizzy whenever one looked upon it.

There were eight picture of diagrams where it mainly retold the tale of a person.

The rough story of the eight diagrams said, there were once some very powerful people. From the clap of thunder in the skies, they managed to harvest the heavenly fire which they used to refine pills. The pictures showed the process of them refining pills in the Ninth Heavens.....this was somewhat ridiculous, mysterious and unimaginable.

Ye Qingyu pondered for a while. This [Cloud top cauldron] should be

an autobiography of the first owner of the cauldron. He should have just been blowing his own trumpet.

Contrary to expectations, the lines of the diagram was simple but it was exceedingly lifelike. It should be engraved from the hands of a grandmaster.

As time flowed on, this diagram seemed to come alive, swirling within the interior of the cauldron. The characters depicted on the walls seemed as if it would walk out from the pictures.

“The background of the cauldron, is absolutely not simple”

Ye Qingyu gloomily speculated, at the while his heart faintly palpitated. Previously Chen Moyun had not used his full power to expedite the progress of the cauldron. Like making congee, he used a small flame to slowly stew contents. Once the medicinal power of the hundred grass divine liquid was completely absorbed by Ye Qingyu, it was extremely like that this person would turn up the power of the flames.

Right now, he could only hope that this fellow as per his estimation, had not completely grasped the secrets of the cauldron.

Ye Qingyu surveyed the interior of the pill cauldron, especially the hundred and eight characters. He memorised the orders and sequence of these characters, beginning to translate and guess at the meaning held within. Ye Qingyu held a little knowledge in regards to the characters from the God and Devil age and the Far Ancient age. Previously, to clear up the mysteries of the Bronze book, he had completely searched through the martial library of White Deer academy. Those neglected language

scrolls that no one had noticed, he had read from start to finish.

This characters was complicated and profound. But if given enough time, Ye Qingyu believed that he could definitely understand the meaning held within.

“It seems like, mastering another language, is quite important.” Demon King Ye laughed at himself in self deprecating humour.

Because he did not need to cultivate to absorb the spirit energy within the medicinal liquid anymore, Ye Qingyu crisply decided to focus all his attentions on solving the contents of these characters.

Ye Qingyu had a sensation that made him feel, that these character would have somehow be of use.

Time flew by.

In the blink of an eye, another two days had passed.

Ye Qingyu had finally managed to completely absorb the hundred grass divine liquid in the [Cloud top cauldron] .

Right now, just by opening his mouth, there would be a surge of spirit qi from the hundred grass divine liquid that gushed out.

Every cell on his body, was as if it was completely stuffed with energy that was about to overflow. Ye Qingyu felt that his body was so full that it

was not realistic anymore, like a balloon that had reached its limits. As long as someone blew another breath of air into him, as long as there was another shred of Spirit qi inserted into his body, his body would absolutely explode.

And as for the meaning of those hundred and eight characters, he had nearly completely deciphered it.

“This seems like a technique for refining tools and pills, its called.....called.....[Sole Will of the Heaven Earth Copper cauldron]?”

Ye Qingyu carefully did his best to comprehend the characters.

There was only a short passage on the [Sole Will of the heaven Earth copper cauldron]. But after a detailed consideration, this technique seemed to be all encompassing. Ye Qingyu realised the meaning behind the characters, but the profoundness that it contained was too hard to comprehend in such a short time. After much thought, he felt a spell of faintness that made him unable to reason on.

And at that time —

Dong!Dong!Dong!

The walls of the pill cauldron was struck on again.

“Two days and two nights have passed without any noises whatsoever. Have you died yet? The hundred grass divine liquid should have been completely absorbed. If my guess is not wrong, then you should not even

have the strength to speak right now, isn't that right?"

The vicious voice of the black robed man could be heard.

Ye Qingyu did not reply straight away.

"Could it be that you have really died? This is just too disappointing, that you did not even manage to endure seven days. According to the pill mantra, if you are alive when you are being refined, then the human pill that is produced will have the greatest effect. But this is still fine, as long as it's a human pill that is produce...." The voice of black robed man continue to transmit from the outside.

Ye Qingyu was enraged. "Nonsense, your father I is still fine. You only have such method? This is just too disappointing...."

There was silence outside once again.

Then a flustered and exasperated voice could be heard. "Little trash. Good, good, good! You wait, I'll very quickly make you cry....."

Chapter 125 – Being kicked

Outside the cauldron.

The black robed figure, Chen Moyun sat with in a meditative position in front of the cauldron. Yuan qi revolved around his body, his inner yuan activated to the extreme. Both of hands formed a bizarre seal, and from this seal in his hands, yuan energy surged out and transformed into a red flame. It burned at the bottom of the [Cloud top cauldron].

From the outside, the [Cloud top cauldron] was like a golden coloured gourd. With a small top and a large bottom and both sections possessing a perfectly round shape.

On the top of the pill cauldron, there were the design of the four great ancient mythological beasts carved onto it. The entire golden cauldron seemed if it was covered by a golden halo. On the top of the cauldron were three mountain like crowns that pressed the cauldron down and the entire mass seemed if it was surrounded by golden water. There were not any chinks or gaps whatsoever, giving off the sense that it was entirely one well blended entity.

The pill cauldron slowly revolved.

On the forehead of Chen Moyun, there were also beads of sweat.

Even if he was the [Pill king of Azure Phoenix], but to use his utmost efforts to control the [Cloud top cauldron] was a matter that took great energy.

“This little brat can really bear it. Six days and six night has already passed, but from his sounds he seems to be still as lively as a tiger or a dragon.”

Chen Moyun began to grow frantic inside.

Of his abilities in the art of pill creation, eighty percent of it came from the [Cloud top cauldron].

Tens of years ago, in a exploration formed by the Azure Phoenix academy, he had unknowingly obtained the brass cauldron. At the start, it was just a normal and discarded cauldron. It was only due to the broken and old appearance of the cauldron that allowed Chen Moyun to obtain it when he had such a lowly status back then. Afterwards, Chen Moyun was able to discover the true secret behind the cauldron and his strength began to grow explosively. From just a low class student, he leapt to become the pill master that everyone respected.

But after so many years had passed, Chen Moyun discovered with some regret, that he had only uncovered a little portion of the secrets of the cauldron. Ultimately, he was not able to utilise the full power of the [Cloud top cauldron]. He was not able to do as the [Pill mantra] described and achieve the realm where man and cauldron could combine into one.

He was not even able to truly activate the [Cloud top cauldron].

But even if so, the scraps that he was able to obtain from the [Cloud top cauldron] was enough for him to become the [Pill King of Azure Phoenix]

that was famed throughout the lands.

If he was able to completely decipher the mysteries behind the [Cloud top cauldron], would this not represent that he could soar into the heavens in one go?

Therefore, to refine the human pill of dragon blood, he chose a method that needed to expend a great deal of effort and would spare no expense. He used a special method that he would not normally utilise to refine the pill and also expended the divine herbs that he had spent his life accumulating that was akin to his dowry. He gave up everything to refine the [Human pill of dragon blood].

In reality, even the [Human pill of dragon blood] was something that Chen Moyun had unintentionally peeked at in a forbidden tome within the Azure Phoenix academy.

He had never ever created such a thing before.

Using a live person to create a pill was a forbidden technique within Snow country.

Once it was exposed, he would suffer the punishment of the laws of the country as well as the exclusion of the human race in the entire martial world. It could be said that the risk to undertake such a task was extremely great.

But Chen Moyun still chose to take such a risk.

If he was able to create a [Human pill of dragon's blood] and ingest it into his body, it could add another five hundreds years to his life. At that time, he could definitely completely understand the secrets and profoundness of the [Cloud top cauldron]. Relying on the [Cloud top cauldron], he could absolutely soar in the skies. After entering into the Bitter Sea stage, even the immortal stage would not pose a problem for him.

And at that time, his title could change. It would change into the [Pill king of Snow country].

“As long as I work harder, and completely refine this brat, every one of my grand schemes can become reality!”

Chen Moyun did his utmost, not even sparing a shred of energy.

His inner yuan, was currently being expended at a crazy rate.

The fifty Spirit springs that he possessed was fiercely fluctuating all around his body. The yuan qi springs soared out and travelled through his body and meridians. It eventually transformed into the power of flames that surged from the seals in his hands, activating the cauldron.

In the blink of an eye, another day and night had passed.

Chen Moyun's sweat was like starch paste. The back of his head and shoulders was completely drenched.

In total, an entire seven days and seven nights of time had already

passed in refining this pill.

“That little brat should have completely died already.”

Chen Moyun tapped on the copper walls of the cauldron.

The angry voice of Ye Qingyu came from within the cauldron. “Why are you so noisy? Your father I was comfortably sleeping, do you have any civility? Can you let me sleep a good sleep, I still have to train in a little while.....”

Chen Moyun was taken aback, nearly spitting out a mouthful of blood.

What had happened?

The little brat had not died yet.

Something was not right.

Previously, he had attempted to refine living creatures within the [Cloud top cauldron] before. There was a time that he had managed to refine a four star demon soldier, creating a demon pill. This four star demon soldier, no matter whether considering his life force or demonic powers, was above Ye Qingyu in strength. It ultimately was only able to withstand six days and nights before perishing. Ye Qingyu was only a little martial artist of three Spirit springs, how could he endure for such a long time?

Chen Moyun was somewhat confused.

But after some rapid thinking, he quickly thought of the explanation.

“That’s right, this little brat possesses the [Holy body of the dragon’s blood]. It is a body type that can be placed in the top three of the human race since antiquity. Naturally, it will be a little abnormal. To want to completely refine him, most likely more effort must be used. Haha, if it is like this, the stronger the holy body, when it is finally refined into a human pill, the effects will be even greater.....haha, this time I really have encountered a great fortune.”

Thinking of this, the worries in Chen Moyun’s heart quickly disappeared.

Utilising the time efficiently, he once again refined for another half day.

“This should be about right.....” He knocked on the walls of the cauldron yet again.

The result was once again the curses of Ye Qingyu that was as lively as a tiger or dragon.

Chen Moyun began to panic and become angry at the same time.

“Could it be that the hundred grass divine liquid is not enough to completely turn Ye Qingyu into a medicinal man? Therefore there was no way to completely refine him to his death?”

Chen Moyun as he did his utmost to maintain and activate the cauldron, began to consider what possible explanations there was for Ye Qingyu's continued survival.

After a hesitation, he grinded his teeth. From within a ring on his finger, he took out a rouge container made from jade. Inside, there was a transparent crystal the width of a finger. Like a gelatinous dessert, it trembled and swayed. Under the light, it emitted a five coloured radiance, shining with a dream like colour.

Chen Moyun's gaze, when he saw this crystal, was as if seeing the roots of his life.

"I've spent a thousand efforts and suffered ten thousand hardships to acquire this. Half my life was spent before I could obtain an ounce of Origin crystal. I really can't bear to part with it.....but it is only a dead object, and humans are alive. As long as I am able to refine the human pill of dragon's blood, even a greater price, is worth it!

He grinded his teeth, thousands of expressions flitting through his face.

Finally he solidified his determination. With a wave of his hand, this ounce of Origin crystal was thrown into the [Cloud top cauldron].

Then he bit apart the tip of his tongue. A mouthful of the essence of his blood was spat on the flames of the cauldron.

Boom!

The light of the fire exploded.

The originally scarlet red flame, turned into a violet colour, swirling around the cauldron.

As expected, Ye Qingyu's exhalation of shock was able to be heard within the cauldron. Then, it was the sound of chaotic impacts within the cauldron. From an initial estimation, he should be madly struggling inside. It seemed like there was an immediate effect.

Chen Moyun was overjoyed.

He did not delay any longer, spitting out another three spurts of the essence of his blood. He continued to enhance the flame.

After losing four spurts of blood essence, Chen Moyun's face became more much pale and pallid. As if he had suddenly aged many times. His originally grey hair, had completely turned silver white. There were countless more wrinkles on his face, as if he had aged tens of years in an instant.

He bit his teeth, continuing to activate his inner yuan.

All of his strength was squeezed out.

And under the mad activation of Chen Moyun, one was able to hear the indistinct roar of beasts above the cauldron. The four figures of the

ancient mythological beast began to have an aura revolving around it. As if they were alive, an inexplicable apparition could be seen.

Chen Moyun became overjoyed.

“The cauldron has come alive!”

This time, even the heavens are aiding me.

The roar of the divine beasts and the aura enveloping the cauldron, was an scene that had never occurred before when he utilised the cauldron.

In the time of a day and night, the human pill could definitely be successfully refined.

Chen Moyun did his utmost.

.....

.....

“The situation is not good!”

Ye Qingyu’s body was completely red, as if he was a tomato that was about to break apart in boiling water.

The origin crystal the width of a finger, sunk from above. It floated in

front of Ye Qingyu.

From within the origin crystal, a terrifying Spirit energy was emitted that surged and roiled within the [Cloud top cauldron]. Compared to the Spirit energy of the hundred grass divine liquid, it was many, many times more concentrated. Under the effect of the pill cauldron, the terrifying Spirit energy, madly rushed towards Ye Qingyu's body.

Ye Qingyu originally felt like he was a fatty that was already very full and was about to vomit. But at that moment, someone madly stuffed yet more items into his mouth.

Such a sensation of engorgement, made him completely crazy.

He unendingly swung his fists, beating on the walls of the cauldron, wanting to release the energy in his body.

And at the same time, within the pill cauldron, another change happened.

On the eight patterns carved onto the walls of the cauldron, every line began to emit with a radiance. As if every line was an ordered chain, it shot out from the walls, wrapping around Ye Qingyu's body. It was as if it wanted to pierce and bury into his flesh. The refining power of the cauldron, through these lines, seamlessly affected Ye Qingyu's body.

“If this continues on, will I become the first person in history that is stuffed to death with Spirit energy?”

Countless thoughts flickered in Ye Qingyu's mind.

“Then lets do it!”

He made an extremely mad decision.

Fiercely suppressing the chaos in his heart, he began to utilise the nameless heart sutra. He did not reject the Spirit energy within the Origin crystal anymore, but instead began to absorb it of his own initiative.

Success and failure depended on this.

Ye Qingyu risked everything.

.....

.....

The time frame of nine days and nine nights had completely passed.

Chen Moyun had nearly expended all his energy.

The Cloud top cauldron floated to the ground, incomparably peaceful.

The lines of light emitting from the copper cauldron, were like golden fluctuating ripples. From within the pill cauldron, there was a faint

fragrance seeping out. And in the interior of the cauldron, one could vaguely hear the singing of angels.

An apparition had appeared.

Chen Moyun controlled the excitement in his heart, circling around the cauldron several times. Carefully observing and listening to any commotion within, a satisfied expression appeared on his face.

According to his previous experience, it seems like refining the pill was a success.

According to the pill mantra, the appearance of an apparition, represented the birth of a divine pill.

It must be the human pill of dragon's blood that was successfully created.

“Hahahaha, even the heaven's itself is bequeathing onto me. I, Chen Moyun can finally change my fate. Ahahahaha.....” He laughed loudly. “Ye Qingyu, this is your fate, you were destined to be used by me. Thank you for your generosity. Ahaha, I hope that after you die, you won't blame me. But, even if you blame me, it is no use. You should just honestly stay under the yellow river, and watch with wide eyes as I soar into the heavens.”

Saying this, he used his pill mantra, quickly unlocking the pill cauldron.

The copper lid slowly floated up.

A five coloured radiance shone from within the cauldron.

Within the ice cave, a strange fragrance immediately surged out.

Chen Moyun could not wait to jump next to the cauldron, lowering his head to peer into the cauldron.

It was completely dark inside. Chaotic mist was swirling about, and nothing was able to be seen clearly.

Chen Moyun chuckled loudly, his lips curling in such a fashion that it had gone completely bent. He stretched his hand within the cauldron, half his shoulder going in. Fumbling inside, he laughed loudly: “Everything about this cauldron is good except for that it is too large. Ai, every time after I refine a pill, I have to stretch my hand out and feel for the inside. The human pill of dragon blood, quickly come out! Wahahahaha.....”

At this time, he had an excited expression that was hard to describe.

But at this time, suddenly——

Peng!

On his bottom, a fierce kick was struck.

Chen Moyun was far too excited, with no defence at all. He did not react. With a crash, he fell headlong into the cauldron, a harsh tumble.

Boom!

The copper lid fell back down at the same time, covering the cauldron.

Chapter 126 – I'll take revenge for them

The alarm of Chen Moyun was no small matter.

The amount of inner yuan within his body was as deep and as vast as the ocean. But during this nine days and nine nights, he had nearly completely spent it through maintaining the cauldron. After seeing the apparition of the cauldron, he was so excited that he lost his composure. Furthermore he had placed many defences and safeguards around his surroundings, and was hence lulled into a sense of security. He did not defend against an attack in the least. He had never thought someone would appear from behind him.

Therefore this kick struck him solidly on the backside.

When he had recovered, his figure was already wedged within the cauldron.

“Who is it?”

Chen Moyun screamed in shock. His reaction was very rapid. At the very first moment, he activated his inner yuan and struck his palm against the copper lid. He wanted to break free from the cauldron.

But——

Boom!

The copper lid only shook a few times, without being knocked aside

A vast and endless sealing energy, pressured Chen Moyun from all directions of the [Cloud top cauldron]. He was trapped within.

The [Cloud top cauldron] was activated?

How was this possible?

Chen Moyun had cold sweat all over his body.

His brain was completely blank.

The [Cloud top cauldron] was a secret that belonged solely to him. The way to activate it was special, only he was able to do it. Now, someone had really activated it. Chen Moyun was so greatly shaken that he nearly vomited out his internal organs.....

“Who? Who is it that ambushed me?”

Chen Moyun bellowed.

And at this time, an unbridled laughter came from outside the cauldron.

“Hahaha, hahahaha.....who else could it be? Of course it is your grandfather I. Old bastard, weren't you going to refine me to death? Now

the tables have turned. I am outside, you are kicked within the cauldron, we'll see who will refine whom to death!"

"Ye Qingyu.....you.....how are you outside?"

Chen Moyun was dumbfounded.

He was really seeing a ghost.

But the voice he heard, was evidently Ye Qingyu's laughter.

"Impossible.....absolutely impossible.....just what mother fucking trick is this? You've already been refined into a pill, you.....why are you still alive?" Chen Moyun nearly completely self destructed. He assumed that he had been ambushed by someone, but he had never thought it would be a person that had no possibility of appearing.

Boom!Boom!Boom!

He madly struck the cauldron, wanting to escape.

But the vast and endless sealing power of the cauldron, became more and more evident.

The previous punch, had shaken and trembled the cauldron. But after that, the copper cauldron was as stable as a boulder, not moving in the slightest.

“Hahaha, even the heavens itself is bequeathing onto me. I, Ye Qingyu, can finally change my fate. Ahahahahaha.....” From outside came the mad and loud laughter of Ye Qingyu, not disguised in the slightest: “Chen Moyun, this is your fate. After calculating so much, ultimately you are to be used by me. Thank you for your generosity, Haha, the hundred grass divine liquid and the Origin crystal. Ahaha, to maintain the cauldron for days and nights, but not manage to refine me. But you conversely allowed me to excavate another six Spirit springs in my dantian in one breath. Right now, I am already at the ten Spirit spring stage.....”

Hearing this, Chen Moyun spat out a jet of blood.

He was about to be driven crazy with anger.

Such words, he had just said to Ye Qingyu. Now Ye Qingyu had returned his words to him.

“Impossible.....absolutely impossible.....” He was about to go mad.

To have broken through in the cauldron and in these nine days and nine nights of time, from a three Spirit spring expert to grow to a ten Spirit spring expert?

“You are lying to me, you must be lying to me!” Chen Moyun had no way of accepting such a result. He could not believe Ye Qingyu’s words.

.....

Ye Qingyu stood outside the pill cauldron.

He was completely naked, his skin blistered red. His entire figure was swollen, as if he had grown fatter by several inches.

Both his hair and eyebrows had completely gone ——it had been completely singed off by the scorching heat of the cauldron.

At his current level, his power could not yet be focused to within his hairs. Therefore there way no way for any of the the hairs on his body to be spared.

Ye Qingyu's current state was incomparably sorry.

But the Demon king Ye who had just escaped from death, possessed a very good mood. He did not care at all about the fact that his current appearance that did not resemble a human at all.

Ye Qingyu did his utmost to activate his inner yuan, both hands forming seals. He could not suppress his crazy laughter.

“Hahaha, why would I deceive you? Look at me right now, I am using your cauldron in such a familiar fashion, as if I am playing with my own son. Thank you for gifting it to me. The title of the [Pill king of Azure Phoenix] is really not in vain. Hahaha, you have helped me so much. Both the hundred grass divine liquid and the Origin crystal, you have given me so many treasures, I really don't know how to thank you.”

Boom! Boom!Boom!

There was the continued sounds of fierce struggles coming from inside the cauldron.

“I don’t believe, I don’t believe. I don’t accept this, I don’t accept.....”

Chen Moyun could feel his descending doom. He madly struggled like a confined beast.

Ye Qingyu had a pleased expression. “This is fate. Old bastard, I hope that after you die you won’t blame me. But even if you blame me, it is no use. Thanks to your help, my strength has risen rapidly. You should just honestly stay under the yellow river, and watch with wide eyes as I soar to the heavens!”

Boom!Boom!Boom!Boom!

The strikes within the cauldron continued.

It was a pity that no matter how much Chen Moyun struggled, he could not escape.

“I don’t accept this, how did you get out? It is impossible for you to come out from the cauldron.....Tell me, just how did you escape?” He was like a trapped beast, screaming and bellowing his heart out.

For the situation to change in the blink of an eye. It made the [Pill king of Azure Phoenix] unable to accept it.

Ye Qingyu did not waste his words anymore.

He madly activated his inner yuan, using it to refine the cauldron.

The mantra that he had previously discovered was called the [Sole Will of the Heaven Earth cauldron]. Ultimately, Ye Qingyu had managed to solve the secret behind six of the ancient characters out of the hundred and eight. This was the heart mantra needed to activate the [Cloud top cauldron].

The hundred and eight ancient characters were carved inside the [Cloud top cauldron]. It was very hard for people to discover these characters normally.

In the beginning when Chen Moyun had obtained the [Cloud top cauldron], he had examined and researched it to the utmost. But all his attention was placed towards the four depiction of the divine beasts outside the cauldron. Until even now, he had not even fully understood the four diagrams of the mythical beasts fully.

Furthermore, the most crucial point was that according to a pill master, the outside of the cauldron was the auspicious location, but inside the cauldron was a ominous place. It was an area used to refine dead objects or living creature to their death. The interior of a cauldron represented misfortune. Chen Moyun was a very traditional pill master; he had always followed the teachings of the pill mantra to the dot. He would not investigate into the ominous place. He had never jumped inside of the [Cloud top cauldron] to check before.

Therefore until now, he had never discovered the [Sole Will of the Heaven Earth cauldron].

Ye Qingyu only managed to discover the hundred and eight characters through chance alone.

According to the method outlined in these six ancient characters, ye Qingyu madly activated the [Cloud top cauldron].

“If not for the fact that I am already an expert of the ten Spirit springs stage, I would really have no way of activating the cauldron. You helped me breakthrough, and will ultimately die within the cauldron. Haha, this is Heaven’s will.” Ye Qingyu laughed loudly, repeating everything that Chen Moyun had said to him.

“No, no, it shouldn’t be like this. I should be the final victor.....aaaaaahhhhh...” Chen Moyun screamed. “Just how did you get out? How did you escape from the cauldron? Tell me, tell me.....”

Ye Qingyu did not say anything more.

He only chuckled loudly.

But as he laughed, a hot tear streaked down from his face.

Within the hovering tear, the smiles of the armoured sentry flashed by his eyes.

Yes, he had lived on.

But his brothers, were already eternally resting within the glacier.

He once said, that he would avenge them.

Right now, he would fulfil that promise.

“No, listen to me. Ye Qingyu, quickly stop, we can discuss and negotiate . If you release me, I can give you very rich rewards.....you should know, that I am the famous pill king in Azure Phoenix. There are countless treasures on me, as well as tens of Spirit weapons and also all sorts of precious herbs and medicines.....”

Chen Moyun could barely withstand being in the cauldron any longer, fiercely struggling.

“I can accept you as my disciple. I swear, if you become my disciple, your status will immediately rise. I can help you achieve all your dreams, really, aaaaaaahhhhh, quickly stop.....”

This Pill king made promises after promises.

Ye Qingyu only laughed lightly.

“Ahah, compared to those dog fart precious herbs and medicines, right now what I want most, is to avenge my brothers, the sentries.....Therefore, old bastard, just go die obediently!”

Ye Qingyu bellowed.

The [Cloud top cauldron] immediately began to be activated crazily.

Within there was like the crash of thunder. Chen Moyun was madly struggling, emitting roars and growls like that of a wild beast

But ultimately, everything went silent and disappeared.

A short while later, the pill cauldron was completely silent.

This ambitious Azure Phoenix elder possessing prestigious status and devious methods perished. Finally under the scorching refining flame of the cauldron, he could not withstand any longer. He transformed into green ash, completely disappearing from this world.

Ye Qingyu stopped the refinement.

At this time, he gradually calmed down.

Ye Qingyu began to evaluate his surroundings.

“So I am still at that underground cave.....”

The surroundings was still the ice walls that was translucent and cold. The area he was in was a comparatively large space.

It should be that after Chen Moyun had captured Ye Qingyu, he was too excited and could not wait to obtain the treasure. He had not left the underground labyrinth like ice cave at all and chose to hide in a somewhat hidden ice room. After arranging a formation to hide his presence, he began the process of refining the pill.

Ye Qingyu sat dumbly where he was, wanting to find clothes to cover his naked body.

But the dimensional pouch had already been completely smelted down. The alcohol and meat rations had completely transformed into ashes. Even the Inexorable spear made from black cold steel was completely smelted into scraps.

In this situation, he did not even possess a single thing anymore.

As for the blood that he had obtained from the Boundary canyon battlefield from the two devils, they were luckily preserved. They had been placed in a jade bottle and nourished within his Spirit spring in his dantian. Hence these objects managed to evade this disaster.

Ye Qingyu carefully evaluated this ice room, and very quickly discovered the sealing formation placed by Chen Moyun around his surroundings.

There were three or four layers of this formation. The general use of it should be for concealment and alerting Chen Moyun of any dangers. It could not be classed as any profound formation. It seems like that Chen Moyun was an expert in the aspect of pill making, but was very average in terms of formations. Although Ye Qingyu did not understand the

formation arts very much, but after probing it several times, he discovered that with his current strength, he should be able to break out. That made him much more confident and reassured.

Then he saw, in the corner of the ice room, there was the stupid dog Big Head that was snoring in his sleep.

“This animal that has no conscience. I was nearly thrown in the cauldron and smelted to my death, and this glutton was really still snoring away!” Ye Qingyu could not cry or laugh.

Big Head should have been knocked unconscious by Chen Moyun on that day. Afterwards Ye Qingyu was not too clear on the events that happened afterwards. Within the cauldron, he had not discovered Big Head and had assumed that this fellow was thrown away. He had not thought that this fellow had followed them all the way here.

But he was blocked outside of the formation.

Ye Qingyu whistled.

The ears of the big headed dog suddenly perked up in the midst of slumber. He shook his head, then opened his eyes.

The next instant, he saw the Ye Qingyu that was in the ice room.

“Huchi Huchi.....” Big Head transformed into a ray of lightning that rushed over.

Chapter 127 – Accordance Treasure

Peng!

An invisible barrier, appeared in the air.

The silly dog Big Head directly struck onto this barrier. His face was nearly completely flattened by the impact, appearing incomparably comical.

The next instant he was sent rebounding backwards. He fiercely struck and landed on an ice wall far off in the distance. He became completely confused as a result of the impact, gold stars appearing before his eyes. On the ice wall, he left a clear and distinct dog shape, as if this imprint was sculpted onto the wall.

He was forced to stay outside by the defensive formation.

But he only lightly shook his head, then looked towards Ye Qingyu yet again. He stuck out his tongue and began happily panting, an expression of matchless excitement on his face.

This type of gaze, was like suddenly seeing hope in the midst of despair.

Within his eyes, there was an ineffable radiance of being emotionally moved that was flickering.

As he wagged his tail towards Ye Qingyu, an excited smile spread on Big Head's face. It retreated several steps backwards, then his hind legs stomped on the ground. With a whoosh, he transformed into a ray of light, dashing on bravely regardless of any perils towards Ye Qingyu.

Peng!

He struck the barrier again.

This time the tumble was even more vicious than last time.

But very quickly, he stood backup again. He charged forward once again.

Peng!

He was still struck backwards.

Peng!Peng!Peng !

In the icy silent and lonely underground cave, there were the unrelenting sounds of impact.

Ye Qingyu quickly waved his hands, indicating for him not to rush forwards anymore.

And at this time, Ye Qingyu discovered that on the ice wall, there were

tight clusters of the shape of Big Head's figure. From a rough guess, there were at least a few thousand bunched together. There were so many imprints that the number could not be counted.....

At this moment, Ye Qingyu suddenly realised something.

It was very possible that after he had fainted from his heavy injuries, the black robed Chen Moyun had brought himself to this comparatively hidden ice room to refine him. Big Head should have been thought as a normal battle companion by Chen Moyun, and thrown away. But this glutton could be counted as loyal. He had followed their path, wanting to save Ye Qingyu but had no way of breaking past the defensive formation. It was unknown just how many times he had tried and was rebounded backwards by the formation, landing on the ice wall.....

Thinking of this, Ye Qingyu was slightly moved in his heart.

“Fine, fine, glutton. First don't charge. Wait for me outside, I still have something to do. Wait until I'm finished, then we can go out!” Ye Qingyu gestured to the glutton, indicating that he should not be impatient.

Big Head immediately understood Ye Qingyu's meaning.

Through the formation, he stuck out his tongue at Ye Qingyu. Shaking his head, he had a complete look of flattery on his face. Half his body on the ground, he constantly wagged his tail.

Ye Qingyu let out a short burst of amusement, turning to face the cauldron.

He began planning about what he should do next.

The [Cloud top cauldron] in front of him was absolutely a treasure. Only by slightly grasping the power of it was enough for the Chen Moyun of average talent to become the acclaimed Pill King. One was able to discern the extraordinary nature of the cauldron just by this fact alone. Ye Qingyu would absolutely not forgo this opportunity. But the cauldron was four or five metres tall, made using copper and an unknown divine material. It was unknown just how heavy it was. Ye Qingyu attempted several times, but he could not even budge it.

“This can’t be. With the current strength of my arms , there is at least hundred of thousands pounds of force in it. How can I not lift this cauldron.....”

Ye Qingyu was shocked.

What he did not know, was that previously Chen Moyun had not moved the cauldron. From the beginning, he had placed the cauldron in his interspacial ring, and used the space technique to retrieve it. He did not need to expend effort carrying and moving it about. It was only that the interspacial tool on Ye Qingyu had already been smelted down by the cauldron —in reality , even if it still existed, Ye Qingyu’s interspacial item was far too low class. It absolutely could not be compared to the interspacial ring of Chen Moyun. It would not have been able to contain this treasure.

Thinking for a bit, Ye Qingyu decided to attempt to use the [Sole Will of Heaven Earth Copper Cauldron] to control it.

As expected, there was a immediate change.

Ye Qingyu suddenly felt, there was a mysterious relationship between himself and the [Cloud top cauldron]. It was hard to describe this relationship using language alone.

The next instant, the heavy cauldron shuddered, rapidly swirling and rotating. At a rate visible to the naked eye, it quickly shrank. In the blink of an eye, it became the size of his finger, floating and arriving in Ye Qingyu's palm.

Ye Qingyu felt that his palm was light as if there was nothing there whatsoever.

“It's become lighter...this sensation is too fantastic. To suddenly to become as light as a feather from so heavy a weight, could it be that it has recognised me as it's master.....? Haha.....Eh, this.....Heavens, I can even see the space inside it.....”

Ye Qingyu suddenly discovered, that he could observe the interior of the [Cloud top cauldron] according to his will.

This was far too incredible.

Chen Moyun had obtained this cauldron for decades. But even he, absolutely could not observe the space inside so easily. Otherwise, when he was refining Ye Qingyu, he did not need to knock on the walls of the cauldron to discern the state inside. If he had this ability, he only needed

to have a glance to know all that is happening inside.

It seems that in these tens of years, the [Pill king of Azure Phoenix] still had not obtained the recognition of the [Cloud top cauldron]

Ye Qingyu chuckled delightedly.

If this was known by Chen Moyun, would he be so angry that his corpse would become alive again, then spurt out three pounds of blood?

Ye Qingyu carefully inspected the inner space of the cauldron.

As expected, Chen Moyun had completely turned into ashes. He had transformed into black ash that coated the bottom of the cauldron.

Apart from these ashes, the inner chamber of the [Cloud top cauldron] did not have anything else. Chen Moyun after acquiring this cauldron, had always regarded the inner chamber of the cauldron to be an ominous place. Apart from refining pills, he would not store anything within the cauldron, so the space being left empty was within expectations.

“Leaving behind the horrifying ashes of human remains, just throw it away.....”

After this thought had just been birthed, one could see the copper lid of the [Cloud top cauldron] opening, and the black ashes released.

It was the the ashes of Chen Moyun.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback, then could not help but laugh loudly.

This [Cloud top cauldron] was an accordance treasure.

The so called accordance treasure, meant that it could understand its master wishes and transform into powerful tools according to its master's will. Since the God and Devil age, the appearance rate of Accordance treasures was very low. Only those legendary great characters, could possess one. Different classifications of Accordance treasures had different powers but without exception, every one of them was a great treasure.

Ye Qingyu had not imagined, that the [Cloud top cauldron] was an accordance treasure.

From this point alone, it should not be simply a cauldron.

This Chen Moyun had held such a great treasure without realising it. He was really blind, to have used such a treasure to act as a pill cauldron alone.

Ye Qingyu was unable to contain his joy.

This was absolutely a harvest that was out of his expectations.

He had never imagined that the background of the [Cloud top cauldron] would be so extraordinary. He had not thought that the

hundred and eight ancient characters on the interior of the cauldron, the [Sole will of the Heaven Earth copper cauldron] would be able control the cauldron. Through such a fortunate incident, Ye Qingyu was able to obtain this treasure. For this point alone, it was worth it for Ye Qingyu to experience such danger.

“Eh? What is this?” When Ye Qingyu looked inside the cauldron once again, there was a little thing flickering with light.

His heart willed, and this object was taken out from the cauldron.

It was an interspacial ring.

The silver ring possessed a serpentine patten. Its fangs were biting into a dark red precious stone.

“Could this be the interspacial ring of Chen Moyun?”

Ye Qingyu very quickly realised it’s backgrounds.

Chen Moyun had been smelted into ashes. The objects on his body, had also been completely scorched down. For this ring to remain behind, it was definitely not an ordinary object and should also be a treasure. Perhaps it was a treasure that contained all the accumulated wealth of Chen Moyun through these years?

Ye Qingyu quickly became excited.

But after attempting for several times, a disappointed expression was seen on his face.

This interspatial ring had a interspatial seal. With Ye Qingyu's current strength and his mastery over the interspatial formations, he could not open it and observe the inner space of the ring.

“But this doesn't matter, I'll first keep the ring beside me. Once my strength is enough, I can definitely open it and take out the things inside. ” As Ye Qingyu thought this, his mood instantly became high again.

He placed the interspatial ring to store within the [Cloud top cauldron] once again.

After several attempts, Ye Qingyu finally succeeded in placing the [Cloud top cauldron] into the fourth Spirit spring in his dantian world for it to begin to be nourished.

Afterwards, he began taking care of the problems in his body.

Because he had absorbed far too much Spirit energy, Ye Qingyu's body was in a state of engorgement. In one breath, he had excavated until he reached the ten Spirit springs stage. But the energy within his body was far too rich and abundant, making even his body seem somewhat swollen.

“First, I need think method to absorb and digest the leftover yuan qi energy!”

Ye Qingyu could only think of one method after mulling it over. It was still to raise his level yet again. He began excavating the eleventh Spirit spring. On one hand it would expend yuan qi energy, and on the other hand it would expand the limits of how much yuan qi he could store. Only by expanding and expending at the same time, could he completely digest the leftover yuan qi energy.

“I estimate I should be the first person in history that is worrying about there being too much yuan qi in my body.”

Ye Qingyu laughed at himself.

Then within this ice room, he began training.

With his current cultivation level, not eating for one or two months was not a problem.

Time quickly flashed by.

In the blink of an eye, a month had passed.

In this month of time, Ye Qingyu had always remained in a meditative stance, as if he had fossilised. There was an evident and visible yuan qi fluctuation around him, as if there was a rippling phosphorescent light sometimes there and sometimes not. His breathing was as thin as a thread, like a candle in the wind. As if his breath would extinguish at any moment, the entire situation was very bizarre.

His hair and eyebrows quickly grew back again.

The thick black hair had grown to his waist, flowing like a black waterfall behind his head. After entering into the Xiantian stage, the growth on his hair was very rapid.

Big head was outside the formation. He had been guarding for an entire month.

At the beginning, he would stick out its tongue and pretend to be adorable, staring at Ye Qingyu. It was like a scene that he had finally reunited with his own parents and did not want to leave. But afterwards, when he saw the Ye Qingyu had not moved in the slightest, Big Head began to slumber.

Ever since devouring the [Snow ground dragon ape], the sleep of this glutton became more and more frequent. It seemed as if he would not wake up from his sleep.

Ye Qingyu trained for an entire month.

Big Head slept for an entire month.

That day.

The Ye Qingyu that was within the formation, suddenly opened his eyes.

His long thick black hair began floating.

There was a vortex of air swirling in the ice room, sucking in the dust and fragments of the icy layer.

The originally swollen figure in this instant, with a speed visible to the eye, began transforming.

In the blink of an eye, he had recovered his originally muscular and streamlined figure.

His flesh was healthy and masculine, with a sleek body. In the dim lighting of the ice cave there was a type of masculine beauty.

And at the same time, a surge of deep yuan qi fluctuated in the room. With Ye Qingyu at the centre, it began to be released. A faint steam slowly emitted from the nose and mouth of Ye Qingyu as well as every pore on his body. Then fifteen yuan qi silver dragons rotated and swirled around Ye Qingyu, with form but no substance, as if it was an illusion. Roar after roar of divine dragons, resounded in the ice cave.

Chapter 128 – Path in Heaven that you didn't go

Fifteen yuan qi silver dragons.

Fifteen Spirit springs.

In the passing of a month, Ye Qingyu had excavated another five Spirit springs.

Such a speed, could be said to have surpassed all others before and since.

Apart from the fact that Ye Qingyu's natural talent was exceptional, cultivating in the nameless heart sutra had an absolutely essential effect. Apart from the path of cultivation being extremely simplified for Ye Qingyu, the key point was that this experience was far too bizarre. To be stuffed alive and refined within the [Cloud top cauldron] by the [Pill king of Azure Phoenix] for nine days and night and also receive the enhancement of the Spirit energy in the hundred grass divine liquid and the Origin crystal.....

Such a growth in power, was slightly similar to aiding a sprout to grow by piling resources excessively.

Ye Qingyu was able to grow from the fourth Spirit spring stage to the fifteen Spirit spring in a single step. If this was made known, it was enough to tremble the entire Snow country.

The fifteen silver dragons screamed and snaked, coiling around the body of Ye Qingyu. The roars of the dragons continued on for a very long uninterrupted period of time.

Ye Qingyu arm swiped through the air.

The silver dragons howled and bellowed within the ice room, a powerful yuan qi surged that roiled out in all directions. A vast and deep power, with the ice room as the centre, shot out in all directions through the icy corridors. It shook the icy layers, splashing ice everywhere and the earth shook and the mountain trembled.

“Hahaha.....”

Ye Qingyu’s long laughter, was really unbridled and unrestrained to the extreme.

The fifteen yuan qi silver dragons coiled in the air for a while, ultimately returning and charging back within Ye Qingyu’s body. Transforming into fifteen streams of inner yuan that flowed within his meridians and his body, it finally entered his dantian, and returned to the fifteen springs in his desert world.

A sensation of power that he had never experienced before, shimmered around his body.

“This power compared to previously, is tens of times stronger, maybe even more. But this is like eating a big fatty in one bite. I also need to accumulate my foundation and to raise my mental state. Especially in

regards as to how to use this energy, I am not comparable to true experts of fifteen Springs. I need time to practice and adjust to this power.”

Ye Qingyu knew himself, that the growth in his cultivation, was like a pavilion constructed in the air. It could not be truly utilised by himself as of yet.

“It’s time to leave from here!”

Ye Qingyu looked at the sleeping Big Head outside the formation, and approximated. He should have already entered into the underground ice cave for tens of days. The military of the country should have already noticed the abnormal change in the watch post and sent someone to investigate the truth. Right now, he should think of a method to communicate with Youyan pass.

As he was about to break apart the formation, a change happened.

Abruptly, a loud laughter from far off in the distance, travelled through the icy corridors.

When Ye Qingyu heard this, his facial colour completely changed.

The next instant—

“Hahaha, little trash, I’ve finally found you.

The momentum of the coming person was ferocious.

The voice began hundreds of metres away, but by the time the last word was said, a silhouette, like a bolt of lightning, was already soaring from the left corridor. He landed ten metres away from Ye Qingyu.

His long ashy grey hair fluttered in the air.

If it was not Liu Yuancheng, who else could it be?

This Registrar of the city leader's office in Deer city, had finally found him.

He pressed forward step by step, staring at Ye Qingyu fixedly. Coldly sneering: "Little scrap, I've already searched for you tens of days. However, in the end you are discovered by me.....this time, I'll see just how you can escape!"

The killing intent was like a blade, shrouding the air.

Ye Qingyu looked at Liu Yuancheng. Praying and tightly clenching his last shred of luck, he asked: "Yan Fan and the others? What have you done with them?"

Liu Yuancheng lifted his head and roared with laughter to the skies, his expression covered with ridicule and mocking. "Yan Fan? Oh you're talking about those lowly soldiers? Hahaha, of course I've slaughtered them all. Some of the soldiers were even shattered into meat paste by me. To go against me, then they deserve for their bones to be shattered into ashes.

Ye Qingyu's figure quivered.

This was the news that he had not wanted to hear about the most.

“Hahahaha.....” Liu Yuancheng madly cackled, venting the pleasure in his heart.

He had chased and searched for tens of days, finally finding Ye Qingyu. This time, he would absolutely not give any opportunity for this little trash to escape. He would definitely cruelly torture him and make him bitterly beg beside his leg. Only then, could he avenge his two sons that had died.

Right now, it was only the beginning.

Looking at the sorrowful and tragic expression of Ye Qingyu, he already began to feel pleasure.

Opposite.

Ye Qingyu stabilised his figure, slowly lifting his head. In the back of his eyes, an endless fury appeared. The snowy white teeth struck out like the edge of a blade, saying each word carefully and slowly. “If it is like this, then old bastard, today I will bury you along with brother Yan and the others.”

Before he had finished.

Ye Qingyu's body roared with wave after wave of the dragon's cry, both his fists striking out. Fifteen yuan qi silver dragons bellowed.

The force of the fists, was like as if it was a real physical object, attacking.

Liu Yuancheng was taken aback.

“Seal of obstruction ! ”

His pupils constricted, releasing his strongest defensive battle technique.

The green inner yuan like a humongous gate, blocking in front of him. The wave of light emitted was clear and crystalline, as if it was a real object.

Boom!

The fist shattered the green humongous door.

Liu Yuancheng was blown backwards, landing on an ice wall far off.

He lowered his head in disbelief as he stared down at both of his hands. On the back of his arms, veins had surged out, the arteries clearly able to seen. Like a sinister cobra that coiled around his arms, drip after drip of blood shed from his skin. The skin of his fingers had already

broken.....

The acute pain in his arms was as if it were chopped off.

“You....” Liu Yuancheng stared at Ye Qingyu in shock. “Your strength.....”

Too careless.

He had never imagined the strength of this trash, would grow by so much. Under a state where he had taken no precautions, he was put at a disadvantage and suffered an injury.

Ye Qingyu did not even utter a word, his left hand swiping through space.

The Little Shang sword appeared in his hands.

The hum of the sword was like a dragon..

The autumn water light shone throughout the ice cave.

A terrifying killing intent like a real physical object. The sharp edge of the blade spread out towards the surroundings in all direction.

The surrounding air, was as if it was constantly sliced apart by invisible blades. There were incessant wave after wave of transparent air being

sliced and the resulting turbulence.

“Spirit weapon?” The pupils of Liu Yuancheng constricted, the shock on his face even more concentrated. Then he nodded his head and coldly sneered in a moment. “Fine, it seems like you have hidden your strength. A good scheme and method. However, with just fifteen Spirit springs, to want to kill me, you are perhaps too unaware of your own strength.....”

But before his words were finished, Liu Yuancheng felt his vision blurring.

“[Soul stealing Heaven strike!] ”

Ye Qingyu held the sword with both his hands, the golden dense mist around the hilt was as if it was liquid, sputtering and flickering. Like a demon, it appeared in front of Liu Yuancheng in a flash. The little Shang sword did not leave a trace at all. The autumn water brightness of the sword was resplendent, directly chopping down.

One of the four moves of the unmatched general.

“Arrogance!”

Liu Yuancheng roared, a green lightning sword appearing in his hands.

The sword blocked horizontally.

Ding!

Both swords collided, emitting a clear and crisp noise.

At this moment, Liu Yuancheng and Ye Qingyu were already close with no boundaries between them. Their eyes stared into each other.

Liu Yuancheng could see the icy chill in Ye Qingyu's eyes.

Then he was able to feel, a bizarre energy, that followed along the green lightning sword and encroached into his body. At this moment, he was shocked to discover that the yuan qi in his body was fiercely frozen, with no fluctuation whatsoever. Even his body was somewhat stiff, as if he had lost control of it.

And at the same moment, Ye Qingyu's sword sliced again.

“[Storm of Swords]!”

He still held the sword with both hands, his figure rotating, transforming into a stream of mad gust.

Countless silhouettes swept Heaven and Earth.

Liu Yuancheng was still controlled by that strange energy, with no way to activate his inner yuan. He could only stare fixedly as blade after blade of the storm of swords was cut into his body.

When the acute pain came, Liu Yuancheng bellowed in rage. A breath

later, the yuan qi inside his body had finally recovered to normality. His twenty Spirit springs power soared out, enveloping his entire body and transforming into a yuan qi armour that blocked the storm of swords. And at the same moment, he could finally strike out with his sword in attack.

The green lightning sword flickered, like a long streak of red that pierced past the storm of swords.

ChiChiChi!

Jet after jet of blood shot out from the front of Ye Qingyu's chest.

His entire person was knocked away by the sword qi.

But within the air, Ye qingyu let out a long roar of laughter. "Hahaha, old bastard. Your retribution has arrived. Die for me.....[Judgement of the Sword]!"

As the voice sounded, Ye Qingyu landed on the floor and slid five or six metres back. He knelt on the floor with one leg.

The Little Shang sword in his hands, had already pierced down into the ice layer below.

A strange golden mist, like a liquid, constantly emitted from the sword hilt of Ye Qingyu's sword.

A bizarre killing intent, fermented in the air.

Liu Yuancheng was covered in blood. In the areas of his waist and chest, it was unknown just how many times the sword had sliced him. Pearly white bone was exposed, and vague inner organs to be seen. The injuries he had sustained was not light. But he was a expert of twenty Spirit springs, his life force was strong. Such an injury could not be counted as life threatening.

“Haha, you.....” Liu Yuancheng had only just opened his mouth when his facial expression abruptly changed.

He originally wanted to say, that even after using all your hidden cards you have no way to kill me. But once the first word was say, he could sense an apocalyptic killing intent that arrived down from the air. Lifting his head, in his line of sight, he could see a ray of sword star that descended from the Heavens, chopping down.

It was a golden divine sword, as if a divine spirit had appeared. Without sign or sounds, it could wrest fortune from Heaven and Earth itself, extinguishing and killing all as it arrived.

Liu Yuancheng could not react or dodge at all. In the time of a breath, this gold divine sword, had already pierced through his body.

Boom!

The icy cave shuddered as if it was struck by a meteor.

The layers of the ice fragments shuddered, as if it was a field made from soil and dust.

Ye Qingyu still knelt on the floor with one leg, panting roughly with large breaths.

In a flash.

The ice and dust dispersed, settling down.

Blood was everywhere on Liu Yuancheng. He was standing straight in his original place. His eyes were blank and the sword in his hands had already disappeared.

“Avery terrifying....battle technique.....you.....I.....” He opened his mouth, and the blood was like a spring. His aura became weaker and weaker, his figure wobbling and shaking: “This.....is Heaven’s will. I would really.....hehe.....”

Ye qingyu struck out like lightning, the icy layer under his feet exploding. His figure like electricity, the sword in his hands beheaded Liu Yuancheng.

The head of Liu Yuancheng flew through the air.

“You still have so many useless words before dying.” Ye Qingyu fixed his figure, retrieving his sword and standing straight.

The was a path to Heaven but you didn't go. Hell had no gates but you conversely trespassed¹.

Ye Qingyu had originally first planned to go to Youyan pass, then slowly settle his debts with Liu Yuancheng and avenge Yan Fan and the others later. He did not think that Liu Yuancheng would still be chasing him, not letting him go. He did not calculate that Ye Qingyu's strength would grow so quickly, taking no precautions whatsoever. Ye Qingyu gained the initiative with the four moves of the unmatched general, and under the consecutive moves, Liu Yuancheng's figure perished and his cultivation disappeared.

1. Idiom describing people taking the harder option despite their being a easier option. ↩

Chapter 129 – Flash

He had calculated everything throughout his life, with countless devious plots and schemes. He had caused harm to countless people. Spoiling both his son and his adopted son, creating trouble in Deer city, he had died as a result of this.

This could be counted as his karmic retribution.

Ye Qingyu stored away the Little Shang sword.

Originally he wanted to cut away Liu Yuancheng's clothes to wear himself, but it was already shredded into tatters. There was no way to wear it anymore.

Ye Qingyu thought for a while, then searched the corpse of Liu Yuancheng. He found several storage dimensional pouches on him. Opening the space seal on them, he found that there were already several sets of clothes prepared within. Ye Qingyu tried wearing it and although it was not quite fitting, but at least it could cover his body. He no longer needed to be naked.

He then inspected the other storage dimensional pouches. Inside, there were some riches contained within and Spirit herbs as well as various other similar type of objects.

Apart from this, there was also an unexpected jade container. The craftsmanship on it was extremely fine and detailed, the carvings elegant and beautiful. It seemed exceedingly valuable just from the appearance.

“I wonder what is inside?”

Ye Qingyu attempted to open the jade container, but discovered the formation on the container was extremely exquisite and profound. There should be a self destruct formation on it. If he was not able to solve the miniature formation and chose to open the jade box by force, it would destroy itself.

“Liu Yuancheng regarded this jade container so importantly. There should definitely be some very important objects inside. After I return, I must find a formation expert that I can trust in to unlock this jade container. ”

Ye Qingyu placed the jade container into the [Cloud top cauldron], storing it away.

After rummaging around several other dimensional pouches, Ye Qingyu discovered a jade piece the size of a thumb.

Compared to the [Pill king of Azure Phoenix] Chen Moyun, Liu Yuancheng was evidently more shabby. On his body, there were not any high class storage items like dimension rings or the such. Only this jade piece was somewhat rare. Ye Qingyu discovered three little characters on the jade piece. After inspecting it in detail, he discovered the words [Chen Moyun] carved on it.

This jade piece belonged to Chen Moyun.

“Eh? Why is there something that belongs to Chen Moyun on Liu Yuancheng’s body?”

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

He closely inspected and discovered that there were no restrictions or seals present on the jade piece. His consciousness entered within and half a moment later, a delighted expression showed on his face.

“I did not think, that what the jade piece stored, was a [Pill mantra].”

Within the jade piece, there were some important information or perhaps techniques and sutra stored away. Only a true expert, could place their consciousness into the jade piece. People like Chen Moyun was able to do this, but for Liu Yuancheng, he was still somewhat lacking. What made Ye Qingyu feel that something was strange, was the fact that the jade piece had no restrictions or seals whatsoever. It was as if it was an item that had no owner.

“Could it be that Liu Yuancheng and Chen Moyun were conspirators?”

Ye Qingyu vaguely understood.

This time coming out, he had travelled by the secret route of the army. Normal people should have no way of tracking or chasing after him. Even if Chen Moyun was the [Pill King of Azure Phoenix] with a respected status, he was not a man of the military. Furthermore, this was the Deer mountain range and not the Azure Phoenix province – his influence could not be brought to be bear. To want to find Ye Qingyu, he could only

rely on the old bastard Liu Yuancheng. The two villains should have long colluded together, each of them cherishing their own sinister designs.

And this jade piece, should be something that Chen Moyun gave to Liu Yuancheng to buy him into service.

The [Pill mantra] that was stored within the jade piece was something that only a high class pill master could come into contact with. A normal martial artist absolutely could not see it at all. It could be counted as a precious treasure.

In truth, Ye Qingyu's guess was not wrong.

At the beginning Chen Moyun had relied on this [Pill mantra] to bribe Liu Yuancheng, and made Liu Yuancheng to place spies within the army. Liu Yuancheng had risked to obtain the route that Ye Qingyu would travel, planning to ambush him halfway.

Ye Qingyu's fortune was very good.

At the time that Chen Moyun had handed over the [Pill mantra] to Liu Yuancheng, he had erased the formation seal on the jade piece. Afterwards, there was not enough time for Liu Yuancheng to erect another formation, making the jade piece become an object with no owner. Ye Qingyu could browse the contents as he pleased.

“Haha, this [Pill king of Azure Phoenix] is really generous. Not only did he gift me my present strength and the [Cloud top cauldron], he has also given me a [Pill mantra]. He is completely the grandfather that hands

out wealth, wahaha.....”

Ye Qingyu’s eyebrows relaxed as he laugh.

This [Pill mantra] had really solved one of his great problems.

After receiving the pill formula from Li Shizen at that day, Ye Qingyu had always wanted to attempt to refine pills. But his foundation was extremely thin, with no one to teach him. For him, refining pills was but the spoken dreams of a mad man. But right now, all was well with the acquisition of the cauldron and the [Pill mantra]. As long as he spent effort training, sooner or later he could become a pill master.

After robbing all the things clean on Liu Yuancheng’s body, Ye Qingyu dug a culvert on the ice floor, placing the corpse within the hole.

“Seeing that you have given me so many treasures, I’ll bury you. When you reincarnate in your next life, become a good person.” Ye Qingyu said.

After the battle, the formation within the ice room had already lost its effect.

Big head was still slumbering in a far off corner.

Ye Qingyu picked him up, and exerted all his strength to knead and pinch him.

But this glutton would still not wake up.

“Eh? He is in such deep sleep? Something is not right, it is like he is hibernating.” After observing for a moment, Ye Qingyu discovered that the breathing of this glutton was thin like a cotton strand. He had a slow heartbeat and his body was at a constant temperature. He was like the animals that chose to hibernate in the winter.

A dog, would really hibernate?

Ye Qingyu was completely speechless.

He again fiercely pinched Big head, and still couldn't wake him up. At the moment, he could only give up.

“Just what is this! Other people's battle companion, even if their battle power is trash, at least it can pretend to be adorable. Why is it that I met with a fellow that apart from eating, can only sleep!”

Ye Qingyu could not laugh or cry.

But after confirming this silly dog was safe, he was much more reassured.

“The upcoming question to solve, is how to depart from this underground ice cave that is like a maze.”

Ye Qingyu thought for awhile, but had no way of remembering the path he came from.

“This underground cave has corridors after corridors of complicated intersection. It is like a spider’s web. As long as one step is wrong, every step will be wrong after and one will never be able to escape from here. Previously, when the sentries brought me here, we chose the path randomly in our rush. Plus this is the location Chen Moyun has chosen. I don’t even know where this is. If I fumble around blindly and chaotically, there’s a possibility that I can be lost here forever.”

Ye Qingyu quickly thought of a plan in his mind.

“However, as long as I always head up, and travel upwards, I should be able to leave here. This underground ice cave, at the most extends several hundred metres beneath the ground. “

After considering, Ye Qingyu finally had a plan of action.

He was not in a rush, sitting and resting for a while. He made sure his inner yuan was at the most optimal condition before doing anything. Summoning the bronze book [Titled Fiendgod chart], he began browsing the pages.

By raising himself to the level of fifteen Spirit springs in one breath, this represented that Ye Qingyu could already browse fifteen pages of content in the Bronze book.

Of the fifteen pages, Ye Qingyu had already read ten when he was confined within the [Cloud top cauldron].

The fact that Ye Qingyu was able to escape from the [Cloud top cauldron] in top secret, was only achieved by relying on the power of one of the pages of the Bronze book.

This page, belonged to one of the three sections, [Titled strange objects].

This was different from the pages Ye Qingyu had previously unlocked. On this page, there was not any techniques like the [Four moves of the unmatched general] nor strange objects like the [Sentry guard] . There was only a large Fiendgod symbol, that could not even be counted as a character.

Ye Qingyu after successfully translating it, was sure that this symbol was a formation belonging to the God and Devil era.

He had attempted to insert his inner yuan into this Fiendgod symbol. Then he immediately understood the power held by this formation.

Flash!

This formation, was what was known as the flash formation in the God and Devil age.

The power it possessed, was similar to the [Delimiter] formation that could be seen in the continent. It could break apart the constraints of space, breaking open the limits, like teleportation. From one place, you could appear in another place in an instant. With a [Delimiter], one could appear and leave as they pleased from countless dangerous areas.

Even top experts could not block them.

The [Flash formation] held the power of teleportation.

Ye Qingyu had relied on the power of flash, to escape from a treasure like the [Cloud top cauldron].

Chen Moyun would not have dreamt that Ye Qingyu would possess such an object like the [Delimeter]. Naturally he had not have any safeguards whatsoever and was kicked into the cauldron from behind without any knowledge because he was stupidly feeling for the pill inside the cauldron.

The existence of the [Flash formation], meant that Ye Qingyu had an hidden card that he could use to turn around countless situations.

On some perspective, this could be equal to gaining an extra life.

Right now Ye Qingyu felt more and more, that the bronze bok [Titled Fiendgod chart] was extraordinary. It absolutely far exceeded his most optimistic imagination.

“Apart from page on the [Flash formation], there are still ten pages of the Bronze book that I have not managed to decipher. It should be some rare thing, but I don’t have the time right now to investigate. I must first quickly return above ground and head to Youyan Pass. This is the most important matter.”

Ye Qingyu stuffed Big Head into his chest, inner yuan surging into the

Flash formation.

“Flash!”

Accompanied by his clear and loud shout, Ye Qingyu's figure ascended. He disappeared from his original location.

Since the last time he had used the [Flash formation], over a month had already passed. He could already use it again.

With Ye Qingyu's current strength, by activating the [Flash formation], he could approximately teleport to a distance of around five miles – that is around five thousand or so metres. He chose to flash upwards. This would definitely be out of the boundaries of the ice cave, and return him above ground.

The truth proved, that Ye Qingyu's judgement was correct.

The underground ice cave should be located five hundred to a thousand metres below the ground. His flash carried him in one to four thousand metres in the air.

Fresh air surged towards him from all directions.

The cold astral winds gusted by him, making him feel extremely comfortable.

As the first of the red sun shone towards him, warm sunlight descended

on his body, making everywhere bright.

Ye Qingyu could not help but scream in exhilaration.

He had been in that dim underground cave with no days at all for more than a month, breathing in the thin and ancient air for a very long time. Now he had finally returned to a normal environment. Ye Qingyu felt a sensation similar him being born anew.

Under the strong wind, the clouds were like waves in the sea.

“I’ve finally came out alive.....”

Chapter 130 – Lu Zhaoge

Ye Qingyu greedily sucked in large mouthful after large mouthful of fresh air.

A short moment later, he descended back to the ground, standing alone on top of a snowy peak.

Looking downwards, the surrounding snowy white peaks were standing in great numbers. One could largely judge, that this location was still within the hundred broken mountains. But evidently, there was still an extremely great distance from here to the nearest watch post. Ye Qingyu did not possess the routes of the military. At this time, he did not know exactly what direction to travel.

“Youyan pass is directly North. If I just head North, I should reach it sooner or later?”

Ye Qingyu bitterly smiled. It seems like that he could only use such an idiotic method.

He was about to soar through the skies and head towards the North, when an unexpected change occurred.

“Who is that person loudly screaming?”

A loud shout, like the rumble of thunder in the summer, incessantly sounded from far away, spreading everywhere. The sound waves where

so strong, that it began to shake the sea of clouds, and even the strong gusts in the skies were faintly moved.。

As the sound of the shout had not yet finished, another sound came piercing through the skies.

Xiu!

A great fissure was torn apart in the cloud layers.

A figure like an electric arrow, drew a trajectory through the heavens. He arrived in an instant, descending fifty metres before Ye Qingyu.

“Was it you who was screaming crazily just now? You.....Eh? So it was you.....” The tone of the silhouette was originally cold, but as his gaze landed on Ye Qingyu’s face, he suddenly became emotionally moved. “Motherfucker, you little brat, just where have you died to in these days. You made your father I, afraid and alarmed searching for you.”

As he said this, the silhouette flashed, arriving before Ye Qingyu in an instant.

Pak!

The person lifted his hand and punched Ye Qingyu in the chest.

Ye Qingyu looked downwards, then was overjoyed at the unexpected fortunate occurrence. Exclaiming, “Old Wen? You, you.....why are you

here?”

The person that suddenly appeared, was really astonishingly Wen Wan.

Ye Qingyu did not imagine that he would bump into Wen Wan at such a place.

“Why am I here? That’s all due to your fault, you stinky little brat. Once I heard there was a problem in the watch post, your father I rushed over from Youyan pass overnight. Motherfucker, did you know, I’ve already spent over a month of time searching for you in the hundred broken mountains? I’ve nearly dug up these mountains looking for you.....” Wen Wan said with anger but with laughter hidden within. “Just what has happened? The sentry post has collapsed, what did you guys encounter?”

“It’s a long story.” Ye Qingyu bitterly smiled, retelling everything that had happened.

He hid away those comparatively secret matters concerning the bronze book and the [Cloud top cauldron].

“So it was those two old dogs.” After Wen Wan had finished hearing the story, he grinded his teeth. “Luckily for them, they have died quickly. Otherwise, I would definitely make them suffer.....haha, but to bring back the subject, you little kid really have gained fortune from calamity. Your strength has risen so fast. If it is like so, then I can drill you with reassurance in Youyan pass.”

As he said this, in the far off skies, more yuan qi fluctuations could be seen.

Several more figures, came from far away.

“Superior!”

The leading person had silver armour, a muscular figure, with a clearly defined face that was somewhat heroic. The several people around him were all wearing silver helmet and silver armour, evidently from the military. They surrounded Wen Wan, seemingly his subordinates.

Wen Wan flicked his hands with a laugh. “Fine, the person has been found. Wu Guanlong, go and tell the others of the army, to tell them to return. I will send someone to report on what has roughly happened shortly after.

This heroic faced military officer, respectfully gave off a sound of agreement. Transforming in a ray of light, he headed towards the South.

“Fine, let’s go. Lets go to Youyan pass, then we’ll speak.”

Wen Wan slapped Ye Qingyu on the shoulder as he smiled a wide grin.

The other subordinates, evaluated Ye Qingyu with a curious glance.

Their own superior was a military officer famed for his violence throughout Youyan pass. Ever since taking up the official appointment,

he would not give face to anyone at all apart from military order. It was unknown just how many nobles of the younger generation he had taken care of. Wen Wan had all punished those whose work was detrimental, shirking responsibilities and scrambling for merit. They had never seen, military officer Wen Wan would display so much care towards someone of the younger generation. In this month, he had nearly flipped the entire hundred broken mountains over. This young man called Ye Qingyu, just what was his background, that he would make the violent officer care so much about him?

“Everyone, it has been hard.”

Ye Qingyu clasped his hands to express his thanks.

.....

.....

Three days later.

Ye Qingyu finally arrived in Youyan pass.

The location that was known as the pass was the front line between Snow country and the Snow ground demon court. It already possessed nearly a hundred years of history. After several generations of the country's men bitter construction, it already began to emit a vast unfathomable atmosphere. One of the three main peaks of Deer mountain range, Youyan peak, was cut apart to construct the pass. Aside from that, there was a fort outside the mountain and tunnels and

dwelling within. There were countless holes dug hundreds of miles east and west from here, a large majority of the rocky ground and cliff transforming into dents. There were countless formation arrays as well as various military installations arranged in these holes. It was like a forest, numerous and densely packed.

It was covered and shrouded in ice and snow throughout the year. The entire Youyan pass was like a cold city of ice.

Because of the traces left behind by the traces of human activity, there were the even present thick clouds and mist in the skies. Like it was a land of ghosts¹. It was said that this was how Youyan pass got its name from.

The first moment he saw Youyan pass, Ye Qingyu's was completely shocked and stunned.

He stood from the air thousands of metres high, surveying down. The entire Youyan pass was like a slumbering blue dragon, towering and majestic, imposing, firmly guarding the Northern gates of Snow country, it utterly blocked the demons of the Snow ground demon court from entering.

Because this was an important location to the military, the security was incomparably strict.

As Ye Qingyu and the others got within ten miles to Youyan pass, they had already received the interrogation of four waves of little patrols. Formation airships patrolled all around. Thankfully with the famed violent officer Wen Wan beside him, the various questioning procedures

became much simpler.

After passing twenty covert watch posts, Ye Qingyu's feet finally stepped on the ground of Youyan pass.

It was a city in the mountain.

A mountain city that was in ice and snow.

It was the winter season. The air here was even harsher compared to Deer city. Many of the architecture in the outside city was constructed using cold ice. The people on the streets, largely wore leather coats and cotton padded clothes. But they would not cower and huddle for warmth, evidently having adapted to the cold environment. Instead, they seemed very vigorous and energetic.

“You first go to the Pass Lord's residence, and report for duty to Pass Lord Lu.....then go to the military camps to obtain your armour and your badge.”

Wen Wan brought Ye Qingyu along. Sitting on a snow dragon chariot, they headed towards the Pass Lord's residence at a rapid speed.

A snow dragon was the special Spirit beast that belonged to Youyan pass. With an extremely powerful ability to bear weight, it was said to be a descendant branch of the ancient dragon. It's head was like a dragon, the horn sharp like blades or swords. It's hind legs were developed and sturdy, able to shoot through the snowy ground. The forelegs was like claws, able to hold weapons. High class snow dragons could spit out

lightning and also fly.

But this snow dragon chariot that they travelled in, was a somewhat low class.

On the way, Wen Wan took great pains to introduce Ye Qingyu to the situation regarding Youyan pass, especially the organisational structure of the military and what forces composed the power base of Youyan pass. Attentively telling him on what he should pay attention to, what people he could not pay attention to, what people he must pay respect to and distance himself from, what matters he could do as he pleased, and what situations where he must not interfere etc.....

“How come you have only come for a year to the front lines, and become so womanish?” Ye Qingyu laughed.

In the end, he had missed the time where they had not seen each other.

After they had met, they were especially close. But his mouth could not help but insult him several times.

Perhaps this was the friendship between men.

“You little brat is really living in plenty without appreciating it.” Wen Wan sighed with sorrow. “Thinking back, when your father I came here, I was not familiar with the situation or people. I was played around with people who looked down on me, causing quite a few laughable situation to happen. I nearly had my head chopped off by breaking the rules of the army.....Right now you have me following you everywhere and pointing

out a clear path for a little brat like you. Yet you're still not satisfied."

Ye Qingyu laughed uproariously.

Wen Wan said resentfully, "I finally discovered, that I came here to pave the path for you."

On the way, they once again encountered many heavily armed patrols.

This was different from Deer city. Every structure in Youyan pass, was constructed with the foremost consideration of sturdiness and suitability for battle. Even civilian houses, were constructed like forts. The roads were wide and straight, nearly every building square. The large majority of citizens living here were soldiers, or the family of military officers. There were merchants and normal civilians, but these people were very few in numbers.

It was said that there was an army two hundred thousand strong in Youyan pass stationed by the Snow country, but the true elite should only number around a hundred thousand.

The closer they got to the Pass Lord's residence, the stricter the security was.

The snow dragon chariot passed over a total of twenty one formation fences, entering into the inner city. And after travelling for another twenty minutes, they could finally see their destination. Far off in the distance, the completely white building was like a divine palace in the clouds. It was the residence of the Pass Lord.

“Within a thousand metres from the Pass Lord residence, all civilian court officials dismount and all military officers must get off from their vehicles. ”

The silver armoured guards loudly shouted.

“Dismount. ”

Wen Wan gave a signal, bringing Ye Qingyu down the chariot. Fixing his clothes, he continued to walk forward.

The lord of Youyan pass, was known as Lu Zhaoge. He was one of the only princes of country that had a different surname. Receiving the title as the Lord of the North that drove away the demons, he was a legendary person.

Rumour had it that Lu Zhaoge was the playmate of the Emperor of Snow country, and had a exceedingly great relationship with the Emperor. He was a true martial artist standing at the peak. He had once, one man and his blade alone, entered deeply into enemy territory, invading a thousand miles into the Snow Ground demon court. He annihilated ten thousand elite demon soldiers, and beheaded the head of a status at the entrance to the demon court, bringing it back. He shook the entire Snow ground demon court with his might. He had ruled and defended Youyan pass for over thirty years, with the army of the demon court not even able to take a step past the peak of Youyan. His contribution was outstanding.

Within Youyan pass, Lu Zhaoge held two roles simultaneously. He was

both the Lord of the pass and the Commander in Chief. Holding authority over administrative and military affairs, his words held enormous weight.

In the eyes of countless soldiers in Youyan, this Northern lord that drove away the demons was an existence akin to a deity.

He held prestige and respect that could not be compared to anything. Every soldier and military officer, was willing to die for such a commander of the army.

Even Wen Wan, a brute like military officer who could not be tamed, could not but become more solemn when he appeared in front of the Pass Lord's residence. First he tidied up his armour, then walked step by step inside.

On the gates of the Pass Lord's residence, there were silver armoured guards defending the structure.

Ye Qingyu handed over his identity nameplate and the official appointment. Only then was he allowed in.

Wen Wan waited outside, in a courtyard within the residence.

A silver armoured captain brought Ye Qingyu passing through many lookout posts on the way. They headed towards main hall where official business were discussed.

Wen Wan seemed to have long gotten used to everything here. He

casually selected a pavilion to enter, reclining on a chair. He held his two hands behind his head as he stared into the skies, waiting for Ye Qingyu to come out.

1. place of Youlin — Where Youyan pass gets its name from [↩](#)

Chapter 131 - [NO CHAPTER]

There is no chapater 131 - The author mislabled the cahpter 131 to 132 and so on but was never fixed.

Chapter 132 – Guerilla Warfare Officer

Approximately ten minutes later.

“I wondered who it was, to be so unbridled in the Fort of the Pass Lord. To not follow etiquette and reclining down in such disarray. So it was really the infamous [Impertinent officer].”

A piercing and unfriendly noise came from beside Wen Wan.

Wen Wan was originally quite content reclining backwards, but he frowned upon hearing these words. Just a short listen alone was enough for him to discern who it was. An impatient expression flashed by his face. Not even lifting his head, he shook his foot about, and said in an impatient voice: “What, coward, is your bottom itchy again? Scram to one side. You thing with no guts, don’t disturb my mood. Be careful otherwise your father I will beat you.”

“You.....”

The noble military officer that seemed to only be around twenty years of age, stood outside the pavilion with an expression of rage.

From the conversation between the two, the relationship between Wen Wan and this noble officer was not that good.

“Peh, a brash person with bravery but no brain.” The noble officer coldly snorted, a chilling light flickering in his eyes. His facial expression

was as if he had could not understand Wen Wan at all.

And at this time, Ye Qingyu walked out from the inner hall.

“Old Wen, the matters are settled. Let go.” Ye Qingyu waved the formation plate on his hands. There was already the inscription of the army of Youyan Pass written on it. This represented that from now on, Ye Qingyu was a person belonging to the military of Youyan pass.

Wen Wan stood up. “So quickly? Did you see the Pass Lord?”

Ye Qingyu shook his head: “I did not see him. There was only a Mister Liu who received me.”

“Mm.” Wen Wan nodded his head, his thoughts unknown. Gesturing, he said: “Let’s go.”

The noble officer heard the words exchanged between the two. His gaze passed over Ye Qingyu. With a cold smile filled with disdain, he suddenly lifted his leg, blocking the path of Ye Qingyu. Stretching out his chin, he said : You’re new?”

Ye Qingyu gave him a glance, then nodded his head.

“Since you are new, then I will teach you a lesson. From now on, don’t walk together with this brash idiot who has countless enemies. Otherwise, you will definitely encounter trouble.” The noble officer said in a overbearing tone.

Ye Qingyu was somewhat confused.

He looked at Wen Wan, asking: “Your enemy?”

“Him? He is enough to be the enemy of your father I? He is only a coward that ran from the battlefield, and was taken care of several times by me. If not for the fact that his background is somewhat tough, I would have long played with him to his death. He’s not even worth mentioning.” Wen Wan rubbed his nose, saying very arrogantly.

Your words are perhaps far too straightforward?

Ye Qingyu said with anger: “You said you came to pave the road for me. Instead, you came to recruit enemies for me?”

Wen Wan chuckled roguishly.

Ye Qingyu slapped the shoulder of the young noble with a laugh. “Don’t worry, I am definitely not on the same road as this foolish person.”

The noble officer retreated a step with disdain, rubbing the shoulder Ye Qingyu had slapped. He coldly sneered, “So you understand....”

But before he could finished, Ye Qingyu smiled harmlessly. “But, I will also give you a lesson. Don’t be so arrogant in front of anyone anymore. You best not let me see you running from the battlefield. Otherwise, no matter how hard your support is, I will definitely play with you to your

death death. I guarantee, on this point alone, I am definitely different from this brash person who wants to do it but don't dare."

The noble officer was dumbfounded.

Then he instantly realised, that the words of Ye Qingyu was mocking him.

"Stand there." The anger of the noble officer was invoked. He fiercely grabbed the Ye Qingyu who was about to leave, coldly smiling: "A thing that doesn't know death, just where did you come from? To speak to me like that? Do you know who am I?" "

He had heard just now, that Ye Qingyu was reporting for duty for the first time in Youyan pass. Furthermore, he had not received the direct reception of the Pass lord, and was just received by the Mister Liu who had a position akin to an advisor. Therefore according to his estimation, Ye Qingyu must not be someone of a great background. He was only a little character assigned here, and he was free to use his military position to oppress him.

He had performed such a move far too many times. He had already refined it down to the state of perfection.

But as Ye Qingyu heard this, the only thing he wanted to do was laugh.

This noble officer, was completely no different from the idiot nobles in White Deer academy.

Why was it that even the army would have idiots like him?

“Since you have said so much, then I really want to ask who you are.” Ye Qingyu was not in a rush to leave. Turning around, he stared at him, calm and unruffled.

“Haha, then listen well. I am of the left camp, the guerilla warfare officer Lin Lang.” The noble officer had his chin lifted up high, staring down at Ye Qingyu. “How about it? This military position, is it enough for you to lower your head and bow to me?”

The army of Youyan pass, was divided into the Vanguard, Left camp, Right camp and the Back camp.

And the position of guerilla warfare officer belonged roughly in the middle level of each camp. They commanded over a hundred people. Possessing the power to launch a strike by themselves, their position in Youyan pass could be counted as comparatively high.

Ye Qingyu heard this and began laughing out loud.

He lifted his military seal and waved it around. “So it was the guerilla warfare military officer Lin. I really have been too disrespectful. I am the patrolling sword envoy Ye Qingyu, reporting to the pass today. I wonder, do I need to bow down to superior Lin?”

Lin Lang heard this and was taken aback.

He stared fixedly at the seal, his face instantly turning green and red.

Ultimately, he lowered his head and did not dare to look at Ye Qingyu directly anymore.

Sword patrolling envoy!

This fellow, was really a patrolling sword envoy!

Lin Lang screamed crazily in his heart.

The military position of the patrolling sword envoy, was somewhat special in Youyan pass. It also belonged to the middle level , but there was not any ties to any of the four camps. It was also not managed by the Pass Lord's office. It directly reported back to the royal court of snow country, and belong to a special role similar to an ambassador sent by the military department.

Within Youyan pass, there were only ten Sword patrolling envoy.

Each and every sword patrolling envoy, held extremely great power. Their role was to survey the hundreds of officers, representing the royal court to patrol the camps. They maintained discipline and ensured the loyalty of the army to the country. Their role was to monitor illegal activities and prevent discipline from being broken. It was also to report back whether they were any activities that attempted to deceive the Emperor. They interrogated and decided the fate of many officers in the army. All officers below the position of general in the four camps, must accept the surveillance and monitoring of the patrolling sword envoy.

And for those who broke military discipline, the patrolling sword envoy

had the power to first execute then report afterwards.

In total, the military position of the patrolling sword envoy was not high, but they held very real power. They were horrifying characters that changed peoples expression when they discussed it in the army.

But due to the fact that the power of the patrolling sword envoy was so great, this position did not possess any soldiers under them to command. Apart from four or five members to aid them, they did not have the power to command soldiers. Normally, patrolling sword envoys were all experts of the martial path. They used their personal strength to enforce their judgement.

Lin Lang would not even have dreamed, that to show off, he had kicked into such a hard steel board.

With his tiny little guerilla warfare position, even if he had the support of his family, in front of such a fierce character like the patrolling sword envoy, he was completely like a soft piece of tofu. If this patrolling sword envoy decided to come after him with a steel heart, then his little life would sooner or later be handed over.

“This.....this.....your subordinate I.....I.....”

Lin Lang stumbled and mumbled, his face red, not even producing a complete sentence.

As he spoke, at that time, his knees were very quickly about to soften. If not for the last shred of dignity as a noble and as a martial artist,

perhaps he would have long knelt on the ground with a crash.

Ye Qingyu laughed uproariously.

“Coward.” Wen Wan gave a look of disdain.

The two of them left the gates of the Pass Lord’s residence, leaving from the grounds.

Lin lang stood where he was, his face filled with embarrassment and resentment. Watching the back of the two, his lips moved several thousand times, but ultimately no words were said.

Today, he was placed at a complete disadvantage.

As his cold sweat quickly went away, and the icy wind blew past, it made him more clear headed.

As he did his best to suppress the rage in his heart, Lin Lang said silently: “What am I doing, to be scared by a newly appointed brat.....En, the pass lord did not receive him personally, this means that this little brat does not have any background or status. To be together with that brash idiot Wen Wan, his background should be normal.....”

He sat in the pavilion, carefully considering.

He began to feel more and more that his previous judgement was correct.

“Motherfucker, Ye Qingyu is it? I was nearly frightened by you little brat. This grievance is set, you best have a great background,. Otherwise, I will definitely repay the shame of today.....For a new patrolling sword envoy to arrive in Youyan pass, this news, must be quickly spread out. Let me see, whether you can stabilise and take root here!”

Lin Lang coldly laughed.

.....

.....

Wen Wan accompanied Ye qingyu until he reached the official residence of the patrolling sword envoy.

“I’ll come find you later.” Wen Wan slapped Ye Qingyu on the shoulder. “These days to find you, I have already not reported back to the camp for a long time. I estimate there will be many bothersome matters piled up, I’ll first return to take care of it.....the days in Youyan pass is very boring, you’ll soon get used to it.”

As he said this, he gathered his subordinates and left.

Wen Wan’s military rank was also a guerilla warfare officer, commanding two hundred snow dragon riders. He could be counted as one of the elites of the vanguard. Although the time he had spent in Youyan pass was short, but he had already fought in several hard battles and obtained a splendid battle record. He could be said to be one of the

newly rising stars of the army in this period of time, with a significant fame. His reputation was much tougher than the noble officer Lin Lang who relied on his family to come here.

Ye Qingyu saw Wen Wan off. Standing in front of the official residence, he was somewhat moved.

The architecture in front of him, was said to be the residence of an officer, but in truth was built in accordance to the general style of Youyan pass. Square shaped tower, with four storeys, it could be considered as the highest structure a thousand metres around. The style of construction was still made with sturdiness at the forefront; the walls were rough and crude, seemingly very normal from the outside

On the direct northern doors of the tower, there were two words ——

White Horse.

This name of this tower, was the White Horse tower.

Creak!

The doors of the tower were opened.

“Superior.”

A pale and pallid thin youth, wearing rusty armour, and wearing large beast skin shoes, walked out from the front door. Looking at Ye Qingyu

with questioning expression, he weakly said: “Who are you looking for?”

Ye Qingyu smiled faintly. “I am new here. From now on I will live here.”

“Ah? New here?” The youth was dumbfounded, then after half a moment, suddenly realised something. There was a shocking light emitting from him. He said inconceivably “You....you.....you mean that you are the new patrolling sword envoy?”

Ye Qingyu could not make clear why this youth would be so moved but he nodded his head with a smile.

The young man stared at Ye Qingyu, his emotions in turmoil. Whimpering and crying noises came from his mouth. He began madly nodding his head, then knelt on the floor, bowing to Ye Qingyu. After several bows, the skin on his forehead was broken, dark red blood seeping out.

“Quickly get up.” Ye Qingyu lifted his hand, a surge of yuan qi supporting the young man up. Frowning, “Just what is this? Why are you crying?”

The young man wiped away his tears, his face still covered with tear droplets. He said stuttering: “Subordinate.....subordinate is.....is the sword slave of White Horse tower, subordinate.....subordinate I have finally waited for the arrival of superior you.....I have waited so bitterly for you.....”

Chapter 133 – White Horse sword slave

Sword slave?

Waited for me bitterly?

Ye Qingyu was somewhat nonplussed.

Just what is this, do I know this youth from somewhere before?

“Wuwu, my lord, you’ve really come.....” The youth was nonsensical yet again, laughing and crying like a madman. Half a moment later, he seemed to have thought of something, quickly rushing to say, “My lord, please quickly enter. Your subordinate I have ensured that the entire tower was kept clean....”

Ye Qingyu could not laugh or cry, entering the tower.

The interior of the tower was really extremely clean and tidied. There was not the slightest hint of dust. The white floor was as polished as a mirror.

Ye Qingyu carefully observed around him.

The interior of the tower was plain and unadorned. The first floor was used to store various items, such as weapons, spears and blades. Apart from this, there were three or four rooms, that according to the youth,

was where the servants of the previous patrolling sword envoy stayed. As you went up the stairs, the decoration of the second storey was somewhat more detailed. The second floor had a fairly large space, and there were weapons hung on the walls. It should be a small scale practice room. And as for the third floor, it was the resting room of the patrolling sword envoy. The furnishings were exquisite, and it possessed some wooden furniture.

The space of the fourth storey was comparatively small, but both the design and furnishing were elegant. With an incense burner, praying mat, emerald green bonsai plants and on the four walls, there were formations used to consolidate yuan qi of heaven and earth. And on all four sides, there were large windows that could be used to survey the surrounding architecture.....YE Qingyu guessed, that the fourth storey should be a place of quiet used to cultivate yuan qi.

“This is some items that the previous superior have left behind. Everything has been arranged by the predecessor.” The skinny youth Bai Yuanxing said respectfully behind him, explaining in a small voice.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

Then this skinny youth said in a probing tone: “I wonder if superior is satisfied with this place, do you need to rearrange anything?”

Ye Qingyu shook his head. “This is fine, I don’t have any special requirements.”

Bai Yuanxing let out a breath of relief, much more relax. “My lord, you are the twenty first master of the White Horse tower. The previous

masters all held the position of the patrolling sword envoy. It is only that after the previous master has died in battle, there has not been a new master of White Horse tower for quite a while. As a result, everything in the tower has been somewhat neglected. There were originally ten sword slaves in the tower; some has left, some has died, and there is only me left.....”

“The previous master died?” Ye Qingyu was taken aback. “What happened?”

The sword slave of White Horse Bai Yuanxing was also taken aback: “Could it be that my lord doesn’t know the story behind White Horse tower?”

Ye Qingyu heard this, and knew there must be a long tale involved. Pointing to the chair opposite him, he said: “You are called Bai Yuanxing? That’s right, I don’t know the inner workings of this place. Since it is so, then first sit and tell me all about the story of White Horse tower.”

“I don’t dare.” Bai Yuanxing was exceedingly deferential, bending his waist: “I’ll speak standing up.....”

He told the tale without interruption. Ye Qingyu did not know what to feel in his heart as he listened to this.

The White Horse tower, had been founded right at the establishment of Youyan pass. It once belonged to the ten towers of Youyan pass. The first person to enter White Horse tower, was the head of patrolling sword envoys in Youyan pass, Bai Hungyun. He had once possessed the title of

the top four experts of Youyan pass. His reputation was not in any way smaller than that of the Battle God Lu Zhaoge in Youyan, but he died at a young age. During one of the battles with the snow ground demon court, he had fallen a long time ago.....

After the death of Bai Hungyun, White Horse tower had experienced twenty masters in total. Everyone of them held the position patrolling sword envoy and these twenty people could be counted as experts of martial path, all with exceptional backgrounds. Within these twenty, there was a person very well regarded by all. With a similar reputation to Bai Hungyun, he caused the name White Horse Tower these three words, to be incomparably resplendent in Youyan pass. Even a little sword slave, as long as they walked out from White Horse tower, they possessed an exceedingly high status. Normal military officers and nobles, had to treat them with etiquette. They did not dare to be disrespectful in the slightest.

But the curious thing was, that all twenty of these patrolling sword envoy, did not have a happy ending. Everyone of them perished through different methods.....

This caused the White Horse Tower with a radiant history, to slowly deteriorate.

The White Horse Tower within Youyan pass became known as the Tower of Death, the Cursed tower. It was a place of misfortune recognised by everyone, a place where it would bring ominous matters to its master. There had been extremely capable people invited to survey the reason for this, but they could not discern behind it. Ever since the last master, the patrolling sword envoy Dong Mingzhu, died suddenly, White Horse tower had always remained empty. From then on, no one dared to live within.....

Ye Qingyu after hearing this, apart from feeling apprehensive, he was also thinking something else in his heart.

Since the misfortune of White Horse tower was so well known, then why did Misterr Liu of the Pass Lord's residence arrange for himself to be here?

As the well experienced advisor of the Pass lord office, it was impossible for him not to know this story. Then for him to assign him here, it must be something done intentionally.

That Mister Liu, why would he do this?

Was it his own intention?

Or was it the Pass Lord, the Lord of the North that drove away demon ?
Was it his idea?

Ye Qingyu lowered his head and pondered for a while, then suddenly laughed. He felt that mulling these questions over was something completely pointless. A military order was like a mountain; for him to change location was something that was impossible. Furthermore, if this was spread out, he would definitely become a laughing stock.

“Perhaps I am thinking too much. The Lord of the North has what kind of position, why would he place his attention on a tiny character like me?”

Ye Qingyu laughed mockingly at himself.

However, there was still something suspicious. Wen Wan had already come to Youyan pass for quite a time already. It was impossible for him not to know the legend of the White Horse tower. It was exceptionally strange for him to not even mention it previously when he saw him off.

Just what kind of medicine was this fellow selling in his gourd?

When he had time, he must question this fellow.

And as the matter lies, Wen Wan still owed him something. The pearls that obtained from the old golden clam, he had handed it to Wen Wan. He said he would bring it for someone to examine it, yet he had never returned it.

As for the legend of the White Horse tower, as a martial artist, Ye Qingyu had far more considerations than the ordinary man.

Firstly he would naturally not be like a normal person and believe that the White Horse tower was really cursed or possessed by a ghost as legend has it. He was not as superstitious as to believe in these intangible and inconceivable matters. But the fact that twenty one martial artists including Bai Hungyun had met with a made end was an indisputable truth. There would not be waves without wind. There must be some sort of secret not known by others hidden within.

As he thought of this, Ye Qingyu's heart became more and more curious.

Could it be that within White Horse tower, there really was some sort of secret hidden?

He did not say anything, allowing the sword slave Bai Yuanxing to continue with his tale.

Ever since four years ago, and the death of the last master of White Horse tower, the deterioration of White Horse tower could already not be prevented. In these four years of time, there was no one who dared entered into White Horse tower. Originally, there were ten swore slaves of the White Horse tower and their role was serve the master. But as the saying goes, when the tree topples the monkey scatters. Some people met a bad end, some people chose to leave. In these four years, talent scattered everywhere. Ultimately, there was only Bai Yuanxing left.

Because of the deterioration of the White Horse tower, the military had also stopped allocating a stipend.

Bai Yuanxing had bitterly endured alone by himself. He could nearly bear it no longer. He suffered being bullied and humiliated every day. His face was yellow and thin from suffering too much hunger. Even he himself, did not know just how much longer he could endure. Luckily for him, Ye Qingyu had arrived today. It made the last sword slave of White Horse tower, able to see the light of hope....

As Ye Qingyu heard this, a slight affection was felt for this skinny youth.

After the sword servant Bai Yuanxing had finished explaining the

mysteries behind the tower, he stared at Ye Qingyu in fear and high alert. He could tell, that this new master knew nothing about the legend of the White Horse tower. Now he knew, would he immediately depart from the White Horse tower, and go reside somewhere else?

It was not easy for a master to be assigned here. If he was scared away, then it was definitely a tragic loss.

Therefore, the heart of the youth became restless and worried.

Ye Qingyu looked at this youth, thinking of the words he had previously said. His heart suddenly moved, saying :”You just said, that the first master of White Horse tower was called Bai Hungyun. Your family name is also Bai, could it be.....”

The youth was taken aback, never imagining that the master would be able to connect the dots. Rushing and bending his waist, “Not to hide from my lord, Bai Hungyun was namely my ancestor.”

“What? He’s your ancestor?” Ye Qingyu had casually asked this question. He had not expected it would really be like so. He could not help but ask in surprise: “Bai Hungyun had such a high position. As his descendant, why have you turned into the sword slave of White Horse tower?”

The role Sword servant, had the word slave in it. Evidently, it was not a high position.

Ye Qingyu looked at Bai Yuanxing. His feet was unstable, with no light

in his eyes. Evidently, he had never trained in the martial path. In those years, Bai Hungyuan was incomparably glorious. Even if he died in a battle, he should be someone that received great rewards and merits. Why was it that his descendant, would deteriorate to such a state?

The sword slave Bai Yuanxing lowered his head. “When my ancestor died in battle, he left his last words. He wanted his descendants to protect White Horse tower for generations after, not allowing them to become officers. In these years, the Bai family has gradually deteriorated all the way until my generation. My talent is exceptionally poor, and my success is limited in the martial path. To follow the wishes of my ancestor, I can only sell myself as a sword slave, and guard this place.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

If this Bai Yuanxing had not lied, then there were definitely some parts of him that could be admired. His loyalty was excellent. In the future, Ye Qingyu could use him with reassurance.

“Fine, I know. Thank you.” Ye Qingyu patted him on the shoulder with a smile.

The figure of Bai Yuanxing quivered. “I don’t dare, this is something I should do.”

After this conversation, Ye Qingyu became greatly interested in the matters regarding Youyan pass. “Since you have remained in the Youyan pass for generations, I believe that you must understand very well the matters in the pass?”

Bai Yuanxing said respectfully: “I have heard many rumours , but I cannot discern whether they are true or false. Because my body is too weak, I rarely leave White Horse tower.”

“Haha, relax, I’m only asking you about matters that are common knowledge.” Ye Qingyu looked at Bai Yuanxing’s careful and cautious manner and knew that he must have suffered hardship in these years. He always lowered his head to others and had hence created a timid disposition. Reassuring him, he then said: “There should be ten patrolling sword envoys in the city. Before my appointment, there should have been nine. According to logic, as the sword slave of White Deer tower, you should also be a person belonging to the patrolling sword envoy group. Why don’t you seek aid and protection from them?”

Bai Yuanxing let out another sigh. “This is something that you cannot know. The relationship between patrolling sword envoys are special. They cannot be counted as comrades. One of their duties is to monitor each other. From the beginning, the other patrolling sword envoys has never been amiable with each other.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

This was his first time hearing all of these.

“Superior, your military uniform and weapons, are in the tower. Do you need to go inspect it?” Bai Yuanxing asked. “After the previous master has perished, the military supply department has halted the distribution of the stipend. Since superior you has finally come, then I will immediately request for the stipend to be reinstated.

“Good.” Ye Qingyu nodded his head. “Then I’ll first have a look at the uniform and the weapons.

The military occupied a decisive role in Snow country. It could be said that it was the pillar of the country. Hence, their supplies were utterly faultless and of superior quality. Especially for the front lines like Youyan pass, the treatment they received was especially generous.

Within White Horse tower, there were the uniform of the patrolling sword envoy and the weapons associated with the position.

The so called uniform, was really a set of armour. It was called the [White Horse armour].

The workmanship of this armour as well as the materials was exceedingly exquisite. The silver helmet and armour was luminous and dazzling, with the shape like a white horse, two wings on the back of the armour. It combined beauty with functional capability. It could be counted as a great product created by the military of Snow country. Even if it was hung on a frame, it seemed very artistic, like a flying white horse in the heavens.

When Ye Qingyu saw the [White Horse armour] his eyes brightened.

” A Good treasure!”

He could not help but praise it.

After carefully observing, Ye Qingyu discovered many particulars in

different locations. The defensive ability of this armour was astonishing. On the war armour, there were countless formations inscribed. After entering one's inner yuan inside, one could activate the power of the formations. It could withstand consecutive heavy strikes, and it was also possible for it block spears and hidden arrows. It's class was only slightly less than that of a Spirit armour, and it was unquestionably the best choice for protection on the battlefield.

And what was even more rare, were the the two wings on the back. It was not just for decoration. On it, two profound formations were inscribed that could reduce the weight of the wearer and give them the power of flight. After wearing the [White Horse armour], and inserting your inner yuan into the formations, one could control the wings, soaring into the skies.

The experts of the Spirit spring stage could also fly through the air. But this was typically far too great an expenditure for their inner yuan. But if one relied on this heaven horse wings, and borrowed the power of the formation, the expenditure on their inner yuan would be greatly lessened. By fighting against opponents in the skies through this tool, one could definitely gain a great advantage.

The more Ye Qingyu looked at it, the more he liked it.

Even though this war armour could not be counted as a Spirit weapon class armour, but after considering just how hard it is to obtain a complete set of defensive armour like this, it was definitely something special. Furthermore if the abilities it had in battle was calculated, then its value was not in anyway less than a Spirit weapon. It was even higher than a typical Spirit weapon.

Who would have thought becoming an officer in the military would have such great benefits.

Apart from this armour, there were many weapons left by the previous owners. There were all eighteen types of weapons there. Blades, spears, hatchets, battle axe, hooks, prongs, there was everything that one could name. Most of the work were elites products from the hands of a grandmaster, made from extraordinary material. One look was enough to tell that they were the sharp tools used to kill in the battlefield.

But they were all not Spirit weapons.

Ye Qingyu did not mind too much, storing every weapon away.

“That’s right, which of these weapons do you like?” Ye Qingyu smiled at the Bai Yuanxing who had always remained next to him. “Come pick one.”

“Ah?” Bai Yuanxing jumped in shock, then quickly shook his head “This.....no,no,no, my position is too low, how would I dare covet these divine weapons....”

Ye Qingyu did not say anything. With a faint smile, he handed over a set a sharp flying blades.

There were six sections to this set of sharp flying blade, with each section having six blades. In total, there were thirty six blades, with each blade bringing it a silver but slightly blue colour inside. They were slightly curved, with rivets for blood that could be clearly seen. One side

sharp, the other side blunt, the tip of the blade extremely sharp. One look at it was enough for cold shivers to be born.

These thirty six flying blades, was stored in a pale blue strange sheath made from the skin of beasts.

The workmanship of the sheath was exquisite, with a girdle, that could be fixed onto the back of someone. It completely covered the thirty six blades so that a normal person had no way of noticing the blades on the wearer's body. It was definitely a sharp weapon made for killing. The person who created these blades, was absolutely a master of assassination.

“This, this, this.....”

Bai Yuanxing held the blade sheath with both hands, both nervous and flabbergasted, but holding a very well disguised delight. He did not know what to say.

“Take it away. From now on, train with effort. Talent alone cannot decide anything.” Ye Qingyu had long noticed, that Bai Yuanxing liked this set of blade the most. His gaze had lingered on these blades the longest. When he looked at it his pupils would glow with a light, so he had just gifted it to him.

After all, it was something his predecessors had left behind. Ye Qingyu had just blindly picked it up himself. Casually handing one or two pieces to others for a favour, was something he could do and not feel pained in the slightest.

After a slight hesitation, Bai Yuanxing gratefully accepted this set of flying blades known as [Flowing light of the stars].

Ye Qingyu returned to the storey above, slightly arranging his residence and adjusting to the new environment.

Bai Yuanxing took away Ye Qingyu's deputy seal, heading towards the military supply department to request for the reinstatement of the stipend. For the White Horse tower to reopen again, the meaning it held for the last White Horse sword slave, was absolutely not in any way less than being reborn. His entire person was resplendent, in much higher spirits.

As he stood in the clean room of the fourth story and watched Bai Yuanxing disappear in the end of the far off street, ye Qingyu faintly smiled.

This person, he could trust to carry out his orders.

But his background, was definitely was not as simple as he had said.

Although he had only came to the Youyan pass for a short time, Ye Qingyu could already sense a sensation like a storm encroaching. The atmosphere in this military frontier was even more complicated than in his imagination.

Ye Qingyu stood on the fourth floor, surveying the surroundings.

Everything miles away, could be seen in his eyes.

As he silently surveyed the surroundings, Ye Qingyu's mood gradually calmed down.

He suddenly liked this sensation overlooking everything. From this height, the people on the roads were like ants, and he could see the structures and buildings silently standing in the snow. To stare down from the White Horse tower gave him a sensation akin to a monarch or deity controlling everything around them, possessing absolute authority.

From far away, in the falling white snow, a crimson red gradually sunk into the ice mountain to the west.

The time of the sunset.

For the first time, Ye Qingyu felt that the sunset was magnificent.

In that split second, he began to comprehend something in his heart. Ye Qingyu sat in a meditative position, on the praying mat. Activating the nameless heart sutra, he began to train.

Ray after ray of silver yuan qi dragons soared out from within Ye Qingyu's body, encircling around his body.

Ye Qingyu did not stop activating his inner yuan. Controlling the roiling yuan qi dragons, he constantly deepened his ability to control his own energy.

His strength had grown explosively. What he lacked the most right now, was the needed minute control over his power.

Like a young child holding a sharp knife, Ye Qingyu must first increase the control he had over his new power. Only then, could he emit the true power of fifteen Spirit springs. He did not want to be like the young child cut by the sharp blade in his hands, suffering an injury because he had no way of handling this new power.

Time passed minute by minute.

The sun had already sunk below the horizon.

Darkness began enveloping Youyan pass.

The fifteen yuan qi silver dragons lingering on Ye Qingyu became increasingly more concise, their actions more agile and nimble. From the beginning where it was somewhat stiff and shaky, it was already many times more fine and controlled.

Accompanied by the vague roars of dragons, the fifteen yuan qi silver dragons once again entered back into Ye Qingyu's body.

He deeply exhaled a murky breath of air, slowly standing up.

“Two hours have already passed, why has Bai Yuanxing not yet returned?”

Chapter 134 – Soldiers on duty

Wen Wan did not come at the promised time.

That evening, he did not come find Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu had long gotten used to the fact that this fellow could not be relied upon. He did not wait for him any longer.

By the time the colour of the night turned pitch black, Bai Yuanxing had not yet returned. Therefore Ye Qingyu went downstairs, finding something casual to eat. He decided to go to the military supply department in search of him. Following the roads, and glancing curiously at the new surroundings, he headed in the direction of the military supply department.

There were strict rules imposed on the streets at night. Night patrols crossed and intersected in the streets repeatedly. Even if you were a normal military officer, without a special military order, it was forbidden for you to leave the camps. One was not allowed to walk in the streets at the night.

Thankfully, Ye Qingyu held the position of patrolling sword envoy. It was a rather special role, and was not included in this restriction.

After receiving the interrogation of several of these patrols on the streets, Ye Qingyu obtained the correct directions from these patrols. Fifteen minutes later, he had finally arrived in the great camp of the military supply department.

The military supply department did not belong to the vanguard, back, the left or the right, these four main camps. But its position was very important in Youyan pass. Funding and provisioning every troop, they were the god of wealth in the army. They were a character that everyone wanted to have good relations with.

There were less than two thousand metres of distance between the military supply department and the Pass Lord's residence. The large majority of the buildings of the supply department was hidden under the snow and ice, within the mountain. What was exposed outside were only tens of black warehouses and three stone halls.

The ice and snow fenced these structures within.

There were elite soldiers wearing black armour that was patrolling around in all directions of the military supply base. They was a mound every ten steps and a sentry every five. The security was extremely serious. And within the large gate covered by ice and snow, there were twenty people stationed there. The group on duty would be swapped periodically every hour. No matter whether one considered how well armoured they were or their individual strength, these were the elite of the elite.

“Who is it?”

There was a cold shout in front of him.

Before Ye Qingyu had neared a hundred metre from the gates, he had already been discovered.

But he did not have the intention to hide himself. Calmly, he walked slowly step by step, and at the same time indicated his official seal of his position. Activating his inner yuan, the formations on the official seal began to activate. It formed a diagram of two swords diagonally intersecting with a vast atmosphere and great momentum.

This was the official formation seal of the patrolling sword envoy.

Most of the surrounding cold killing intent, in this instant, largely evaporated.

Ye Qingyu knew, that the hidden sentries had already retreated.

He did not hurry or slow his pace. Step by step, he walked to in front of the gates.

The four metre tall snow and ice fence that surrounded their base was sculpted from cold ice formed hundred of years ago. On it, was the enhancement of formations. Yuan qi of heaven and earth fluctuated within. This ice wall, was even more sturdy then walls made from steel. The gates were also similarly sculpted from ice, and under the lanterns of the night, there was a translucent mysteriousness .

Before the great gates, there were ten icicles on each side with a girth that you could wrap your arms around. These were erected to the left and right of the gates.

These icicles were tens of metres high.

“Superior.” The captain of the soldiers that were on duty at the gates came over, slightly bowing to Ye Qingyu. His face was covered by the black face armour. In the colour of the darkness, he seemed like a monster of the night. Seemingly grim and unfeeling, he extended his hand. “For what matter have superior you come to the military supply department? Please could you show your seal.”

Ye Qingyu handed over his official seal.

His gaze, passed by this chilling soldier on duty that was like a monster of the night. His gaze casually flicked to above the icicles.

But in the next instant, his gaze froze while looking at the pillar.

And at the same time, the soldier on duty seeing Ye Qingyu's official seal was slightly taken aback. He could not help but lift his head and have another glance at Ye Qingyu. Seeing that this patrolling sword envoy was unfamiliar and young, he instantly knew that this was the rumoured new patrolling sword envoy here to fulfil the empty position.

Connecting this with the matter that had happened this evening, the captain on duty, instantly understood that this would not end well.

He extended his hand to hand the official seal respectfully over....

But at that time, he could only feel his vision ferociously blurring. The figure of Ye Qingyu had disappeared.

The other armoured soldiers let out shocked exclamations.

They could only see Ye Qingyu's body, like it was a humongous avian, appearing in an instant at the tip of an icicle. His hand like a knife, he cut through a ice pillar as if it was tofu. He released a prisoner that was chained to the icicle. Holding him into his embrace, he floated back to the ground.

There was no sound as he landed, nor traces of his descent in the snow.

The twenty ice pillars outside the gates, were known as the [Punishment pillars of warning]. It was a place where the military supply departments punished criminals. Those soldiers who had committed serious crimes would be hung at the top of these formation ice pillars, serving as warning to everyone. Some outside people who had conflicts with the officers of the military supply department, would also receive such a punishment, to enforce the military authority of the supply department.

Ye Qingyu looked at the armoured soldiers on duty, saying: "Why is the sword slave of White Horse tower hung on the ice pillar? I need an explanation."

The person in his embrace, was the sword slave of White Horse tower, Bai Yuanxing. He was already at his last breaths.

"This...." The captain of the soldiers on duty hesitated, about to say something.

Ye Qingyu quickly checked the injuries of Bai Yuanxing and his expression faintly changed. He did not tarry any longer, soaring back towards the direction of White Horse tower.

“Whoever did it, tell him to scram to White Horse tower and explain himself to me.”

A voice containing fury, resounded throughout the night air.

In the blink of an eye, Ye Qingyu had already disappeared in the vast night air.

The captain of the guards on duty was dumbfounded for a moment, then thought of something. Gesturing for one of his subordinates to come over, he said something to him in a low voice beside his ear. This subordinate followed the order, turning and running inside the gates.....

After a short while, a black robed young man walked out.

The leader of the soldiers on duty handed over the military seal over, saying something in a low voice. He pointed in the direction of the empty [Punishment pillars] that was still vibrating.

The face of the black robed young man, instantly became somewhat embarrassed.

His figure flashed, soaring upwards and following along the ice pillar. Halfway up, his hands pressed down on the icicle, borrowing force to lift himself up further. Grabbing the edge of the snapped off ice pillar, he

inspected the cut of the ice pillar. It was smooth and polished like a mirror. His eyebrows became even more furrowed.

This ice pillar had received the enhancement of formations. Blades and swords could hardly harm it.

But the cut was sharp and polished. According to the words of the head soldier, it seemed to have been broken by the newly arrived patrolling sword envoy....

It seems like the strength of this new officer, could not be underestimated.

The black robed young man landed back on the ground.

The leader of the soldier's facial features was covered by black face armour and his expression not able to be clearly seen. But he had clearly witnessed, that the same action of jumping to the top of the pillar, Ye Qingyu's movement was as nimble and as agile as a snowflake, but the black robed young man was somewhat more clumsy and heavy.....

The one above and the one below was already decided.

“What did he say when he left?” The black robed young man asked.

“He said, who acted against his people, scam to the White Horse tower to give him an explanation.” The leading soldier on duty, explained everything that had occurred in detail ,not hiding anything in the slightest.

The black robed young man nodded his head. Lowering his head to look at the official seal of the patrolling sword envoy, he did not say anything in the end. Turning around, he headed inside the gates of the military supply department.

The night wind whistled.

The floating snow was like blades.

“Superior, just what is this?” Another soldier on duty came over, curiously asking.

That black robed young man just now, was called Zhao Ruyun, an officer in charge of allocating supplies in the department. Wielding power, he was namely the person responsible for allocating resources to the areas around White Horse tower. Of the thirty six officers in charge of allocating supplies, he could be counted as one of the most talented. With powerful strength, exceptional family background, he had received the trust and usage of the high ups. He could be counted as a rising star of the supply department.

But similar in all cases, when a young man had great achievements, he could not help but be somewhat haughty and be arrogant.

Zhao Ruyun was not an exception.

Normally, this young man was haughty and his style of work pitiless. But unfortunately, his post held real authority. A casual little action by

him could make someone suffer hardship they were unable to bear. Even those who had a higher military position and strength than Zhao Ruyun would give him some face.

Today, without knowing why, as the timid sword slave from White horse tower came to request their stipend, Zhao Ruyun was suddenly enraged. Reprimanding the sword slave for taking the stipend in vain, he ordered people to tie him up and beat him until he fainted. He hung him on the [Punishment pillars] for him to be frozen alive.

But it seemed like, this time Zhao Ruyun had provoked a fierce character.

The White Horse tower that had been left abandoned for four years. A new patrolling sword envoy had unexpectedly arrived.

But this patrolling sword envoy, from what it seemed like, was not going to display any sort of weakness whatsoever.

The captain of the soldiers on duty gave a glance at the soldier that had walked over, shaking his head. “Don’t ask so many whys. These are not characters that we are able to provoke. Carefully guard your position. Curiosity can kill. Manage your mouths. The things that occurred here, don’t go and spread it around. Don’t blame me for not reminding you when disaster falls on your head for speaking too much.”

The soldiers quickly nodded their heads.

As he watched his subordinates departing, the leader thought about

many more things.

According to the daytime rumours, there was a newly arrived patrolling sword envoy whose smell of his mother's milk had not yet dried¹. He had a fairly sizeable clash with the guerilla warfare officer Lin Lang in the Pass Lord's residence. Who would have thought, that only a couple of hours after, he was able to see with his own eyes, the patrolling sword envoy that entered the Death tower.

Although the territory of Youyan pass stretched out for hundreds of miles, but in reality it was very small circle.

Everything that happened within, would quickly spread out. As long as one paid attention, they would be able to obtain the information they wanted.

He believed, that the events here tonight, would quickly spread out.

The newly arrived young patrolling sword envoy would unquestionable become the focus of everyone's eyes. Countless gazes would gather on the body of this youth. This was especially so, since the position of the patrolling sword envoy was so special and it possessed significant power. If this youth was a fierce character and had great background, the moment he chose which faction to enter, was when the current balance of Youyan pass would be broken.

This was like scattering a bunch of salt into hot oil. Once the appearance of the new patrolling sword envoy was made known, it would cause the wok of oil, Youyan pass, that was already boiling, to completely roil and roar.

Without knowing why, the leader of the soldiers had a premonition. There would soon be some incredible changes that would occur in the Youyan pass that was as stable as a boulder in the tempest and had towered for tens of years through the battlefield.

.....

“Withstand it!”

Ye Qingyu’s figure was like lighting, returning to White Horse tower at high speed.

Bai Yuanxing had injuries on his body, but it was not life threatening. But he had been hung for several hours already on the [Punishment pillars] and had faced a chilling cold wind that seeped into his bones. For the him that did not know martial arts, this was a torture that was hard to bear. Ye Qingyu was able to sense, that the body of Bai Yuanxing was nearly completely frozen.

This was the reason Ye Qingyu did not find the people of the military supply department to settle his grievance immediately. This was the reason he brought Bai Yuanxing back immediately.

First and foremost, was to save the person in question.

On the way, Ye Qingyu’s inner yuan protected the heart of Bai Yuanxing, warming his meridians and extending his last wisp of breath. Once he returned to White Horse tower Ye Qingyu instantly, with his full

effort, inserted his inner yuan into Bai Yuanxing's body to retain his life force.

- 1. Relatively inexperienced ↩

Chapter 135 – A technique that was invincible in theory

Ye Qingyu was very angry.

He did not know just what has occurred when Bai Yuanxing went to the military supply department. But with Bai Yuanxing's timid and cautious personality even if he was the one in the right, he would retreat to some degree. Even if he was negligent or in the wrong, the mistakes he made must be unintentional. But what he received was such a heavy punishment.

In truth, he did not want to know what had occurred.

Because it was completely meaningless.

As the saying goes, when you hit a dog, you have to look at who owned the dog.

Bai Yuanxing was the sword slave of White Horse tower, He was a person belong to White Horse tower. Therefore, he was Ye Qingyu's man. Such an act by the people of the military supply department was tantamount to slapping Ye Qingyu on the face.

He had only arrived to Youyan pass for half a day of time. On some perspective, he had not even stabilised his footing. But in this matter, Ye Qingyu did not want to have any sort of compromise.

Firstly, it was because Wen Wan had once told him, that to flourish in Youyan pass, you have to possess bravery and toughness. Soldiers were belligerent – prestige was the crucial if you wanted their respect. No matter what the situation, you had to be somewhat ferocious. Only then could you gain the acceptance of the soldiers and their respect.

The second reason, was the most important reason.

Ye Qingyu was furious.

Truly furious.

Seeing the youth in front of him that was about to turn into an icicle and his pale, pallid face like he had applied countless layers of face powder, Ye Qingyu could barely control his rage. Although their time together was very short together, but without knowing when, he had already began to treat him as an important comrade.

“Since they want to step on me, then they should make preparations for being stepped on in return.....this is a good opportunity for me to establish respect.”

Ye Qingyu made his decision.

Within White Horse tower.

He incessantly inserted his inner yuan into the body of Bai Yuanxing.

“He really has average talent. His physique is naturally very poor, and he has passed the most opportune period of time for his training. If he does not encounter any sort of opportunity, it is extremely hard for him to be a true expert of the martial path.”

As his inner yuan entered into Bai Yuanxing's body, Ye Qingyu could sense the rate of the flow of yuan qi in his body. He began to have an understanding of the martial foundations of this sword slave of White Horse tower.

He treated Bai Yuanxing's injuries for an entire night.

The expenditure on Ye Qingyu's inner yuan was extremely great.

Very quickly, dawn came. Ye Qingyu finally managed to have expelled all the chilling air within Bai Yuanxing's body. It made it so that his heartbeat and meridians were gradually becoming stronger, with signs that it would get better. His body finally began to emit a slight warmth.

As he arranged the slumbering form of Bai Yuanxing, Ye Qingyu could finally relax and let out a breath of relief.

This person could be said to have been saved.

But it was likely that he had to be carefully nourished for a period of time before he could recover his vitality.

Ye Qingyu left the White Horse tower, and ate breakfast in the stands on the streets. After thinking, he spent money in hiring a servant girl,

and purchased some herbs and meat that could restore vitality, Bringing her and the items back to White Horse tower, he directed the servant girl to take care of Bai Yuanxing.

During this entire day, the supply department did not send anyone to explain about what had occurred.

It was only during the time of the evening, that a armoured soldier came to White Horse tower. He came to hand back Ye Qingyu's official seal and his deputy seal ---this official seal was given by Ye Qingyu to the captain of the soldiers on duty. and the deputy seal was taken yesterday when Bai Yuanxing when to request for the stipend to be reinstated but was captured instead.

Ye Qingyu, seeing that the person bringing the seals back was only a ordinary soldier, knew that making things difficult for him was pointless. He did not say anything, stowing away the seals.

As he stared at the retreating soldier, a cold light flashed in Ye Qingyu's eyes under the light of the sun.

“It seems that they intend to completely ignore the new patrolling sword envoy.”

He smiled slightly.

It seems like the words of Wen Wan was not wrong.

The contest and struggles within the military was even more direct

than in the academy. Sometimes, you had no way of commanding someone by relying only on your military position. Even the Lu Zhaoge who was revered like a deity, did not begin from high up in the clouds. Only through tens of years of time, could he establish respect like that of a god in Youyan pass.

Ye Qingyu did not imagine that he would encounter such a tricky situation the instant he arrived at Youyan pass.

But perhaps this was also an opportunity?

He returned to the fourth floor, continuing to train.

.....

After the armoured soldier returned to the supply department, he retold everything that had happened to the black robed young man Zhao Ruyun in detail, concealing nothing.

Zhao Ruyun waved his hands, gesturing for the soldier to leave.

He silently sat on his chair, seriously pondering.

After a short while.

He lightly clapped his hand.

A soldier that was his confidant walked in from outside the halls.

“Help me send out invitations. Invite the guerilla officer Lin Lang, the staff officer of the Pass Lord’s office, and also...” Zhao Ruyun listed six or seven names. “Invite them to discuss important matters at the supply department three days later.”

“As your order say.”

The soldier turned around to enact the order.

A sinister colour, flashed by the face of Zhao Ruyun.

.....

One day later.

White Horse tower.

Bai Yuanxing was still in the midst of unconsciousness.

But the vitality of his heart, was stronger than before.

With the servant girl’s careful attention, Bai Yuanxing’s injuries healed at a rapid rate. Ye Qingyu would come treat him three times every day, treating his acupuncture points and temple, not sparing any inner yuan in order to help him heal with his energy. According to Ye Qingyu’s

estimate, if no accidents occurred, then in two days time, this White Horse sword slave would awaken.

But that fellow Wen Wan, still had not appeared.

Ye Qingyu guessed, that perhaps something had occurred in the camps. Since Wen Wan could not leave temporarily, he did not rush to go out and find him.

Apart from helping Bai Yuanxing, Ye Qingyu did not travel about the city. Instead, he spent all his time training.

He needed to quickly truly control the power of fifteen Spirit springs, making it truly belong to himself. At the same time, Ye Qingyu finally had time to quietly comprehend the unlocked parts of the [Titled Fiendgod chart].

He sat peacefully of the quiet fourth floor of White Horse tower. He summoned the bronze book, [Titled Fiendgod chart].

Due to the incident previously with the [Pill king of Azure Phoenix] Chen Moyun, Ye Qingyu knew that others had no way of discovering the existence of the Bronze book. Therefore, there was not a need for any concealment. After washing, he sat on the prayer mat facing the window. Lifting the bronze book, he began to read.

An hour later.

“So the ten pages of information unlocked in the ancient bronze book,

are not ten different kinds of techniques. There is only one, called, [Limitless Divine way]. This is really too astonishing, the entire contents of these ten pages, is just concerning one technique.....”

After reading the entire content of the ten pages, Ye Qingyu was very shocked.

He had originally thought, that the situation would be the same as what had occurred previously. He had cultivated another eleven Spirit springs in one breath, and apart from the [Flash] formation, he should have also unlocked another ten parts of the bronze book. In theory, he should have obtained objects like the [Sentry guard] or techniques like the [Four moves of the divine armoured king].

But what made him astonished, was that the contents of all ten of the unsealed pages, were all pertaining to one technique.

[Limitless Divine way].

“Since all ten pages of the bronze book is about one technique, this technique called the [Limitless divine way] is absolutely not simple.”

Ye Qingyu mind was shaken. He was even more expectant in his heart. He continued to comprehend the mysteries contained within the pages.

Gradually, he was finally able to understand some of the secrets within.

“The so called [Limitless divine way], should not be a battle technique. Instead, it is a type of battle state where your power is increased. By

entering this state, not only your power and speed will multiply, your reaction speed and your senses, because of the flow of inner yuan speed, can also multiply.....Heavens, this technique, is slightly too terrifying.”

After Ye Qingyu finished, he was so shocked that he could not emit a sound.

In this world, why would there be such an incredible and tyrannical technique?

Once he entered into the state of [Limitless divine way], it was equal to multiplying your strength. In nearly an instant of time, you could completely slaughter opponents at the same level as you.

Ye Qingyu was at the fifteen Spirit springs stage right now. Increasing his strength by a factor of one, this would be the thirty Spirit springs of strength. Two times would be the forty five Spirit springs. If he was able to activate seven times, then would he be able fight against experts of the Bitter Sea stage?

This.....

Even the legendary sutras, compared to this technique, was only average?

Ye Qingyu could not believe his eyes. Such a method, was not something that humans should be able to possess.

Fiercely suppressing his scream of excitement, he continued to read on.

Finally, he discovered some information.

“So the [Limitless divine way] is a technique for your power to rapidly rise. The highest it can reach, is an increase of ten times your original strength. This is called [Ten Limits]. And it is not that everyone can perfectly use the power of ‘Ten limits’; they must possess a perfect and powerful flesh body. Only then, can they withstand exploding with a power that exceeds their original. Otherwise, once their power was multiplied, before even injuring the enemy they had a danger of perishing from not being able to withstand the energy and fracture.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

If it was really like so, then this fitted in with common reason.

According to the record in the bronze book, normal people practicing in the [Limitless Divine way] at the most could only explode with a power one or two times greater than their original power. Only body cultivators of the God and devil age, with their powerful flesh body, could withstand even greater limits. But body cultivators had a natural born disadvantage in yuan qi cultivation. Therefore in these countless years of time, the [Limitless Divine way] should have been extremely powerful, but very little people could completely control it in real battle. A tiny number of people could unleash the true power of the the [Limitless divine way].

At the same time, even if one reached the state where their power multiplied, this was only a short term enhancement.

According to the record of the bronze book, the person who created this

technique, the prodigy of the Divine race, could only multiply his strength by a factor of eight and could not withstand sustaining it for more than fifteen minutes. As such , this was nearly the limits of the geniuses in history who cultivated in the [Limitless divine way].

The [Limitless divine way], was a technique that was invincible in theory.

And what decided its upper limits, was only one thing.

The power of the flesh body of it's user.

“The power of my flesh body, is much tougher than martial artists at the same level as me. Perhaps this in theory invincible martial path, is one that is suitable for me?”

Ye Qingyu laughed.

Not considering anymore, he began to be immersed in the technique, cultivating in the [Limitless divine way].

Time passed minute by minute.

Ye Qingyu attempted to enter into that state, according to the method outlined in the [Limitless divine way]. Fluctuating his inner yuan, activating his potential, he tried to enter the state of multiplication but was not successful.

“To want to truly enter the [Limitless Divine way], it needs the soul, flesh, blood, spirit, thoughts, will and qi to be at a peak state. Then one must enter into an state of coordination with all these factors. Only then, can it be successfully be activated....”

Chapter 136 – The person walking in the setting sun

Ye Qingyu bitterly trained in the [Limitless divine way].

He flipped through the ten pages of the Bronze book, constantly deepening his understanding of the [Limitless divine way]’s heart sutra.

Gradually, he found a sensation.

In that instant, with his highly concentrated and elevated spirit, he entered a strange state where he was himself but not himself, observing himself but forgetting himself.Ye Qingyu felt, that in the time of the spark of a flint, a strange transformation had occurred.

This type of feeling, was like flowing light, flashing by.

But after numerous attempts, Ye Qingyu finally managed to latch onto the tiniest shred of this sensation

“The perfect state in theory, the [Ten limits] is hard to reach. I need to first begin from the [First Limit], to increase my strength by a factor of one....”

.....

.....

Three days later.

Military supply department, stone hall.

The rooms of the hall was closed. Seven or eight people sat silently within the stone hall.

Zhao Ruyun had already changed into a black Taotie¹ beast skin armour. His appearance was thriving with heroic spirit. He retold everything that he knew, then said: “In these days, Ye Qingyu has nearly not left his residence and acted extremely low key. I don’t know what kind of medicine he is selling in his gourd. The reason I invited everyone here, was to discuss on how exactly to take care of this person.”

“Haha, he is just being deliberately mystifying. I’ve long said, this little brat is just trying to scare people with fake bravado.” The voices of laughter sounded. The person who had spoken, was namely the guerilla officer Lin Lang that had clashed with Ye Qingyu at the Pass Lord’s residence.

In the stone hall apart from Lin Lang and Zhao Ruyun, there were another three or four people sitting there. Their ages were all similar, extremely young and wearing bright armour. All of them had considerable positions within the army and every one of them were young people that came from a noble family.

As Zhao Ruyun heard this, his expression slightly relaxed. “Brother Lin’s words is reasonable. In truth, that night, I was really frightened by him. After all, the military position of the patrolling sword envoy is far too special. I cannot be too cautious. Therefore I have invited everyone

here to discuss a plan, but it seems I have made everyone witness a joke.
”

Everyone began laughing.

And within these people sitting down, there was a young man wearing a green robe. He had thick black hair, white skin and brought with him a rich scholarly air. With a smile he said: “From past examples, to someone to be able to occupy the position of the patrolling sword envoy, their history must not be simple. As soon as I heard the news from brother Zhao, I’ve already ordered my people. Utilising the information channels in the Pass Lord’s residence, I’ve sent people to investigate on Ye Qingyu’s background information. I believe we will very quickly have news.....”

Before he had finished.

As if it was responding to his words, a clear screech of an eagle came from outside.

One was able to see in the skies, a black dot diving down. It was a huge black eagle, ferocious, its body shrouded in divine light. The length of its wingspan was tens of metres and in the blood red skies of the sunset, it was like a streak of black lightning. Shooting past layers and layers of sentries in the airs, it unexpectedly did not meet with any blockages. In an instant, it came to above the stone hall of the military supply department.

“Haha, it seems there is already a result.”

The scholarly young man smiled, gesturing faintly with his hand.

The huge black eagle rapidly shrunk, turning into a ray of light that ultimately entered into the stone hall and into his palm. It transformed into a piece of black jade that was smaller than the size of a hand. The lines of the figure was extremely smooth. It was a jade statue in the shape of an eagle, and seemed charming from its outer appearance.

The scholarly young man shown with a faint light, discerning the information held within the jade eagle statue.

The black jade eagle piece was the formation creation of Youyan pass of the Pass Lord's residence, specially used to deliver and convey information. It was extremely costly to construct each and every piece. With it, it was possible to send a message across ten thousand miles within two hours, incomparably incredible. In the entire Youyan pass, only people of the Pass Lord's residence was able to use it.

And the scholarly young man was the youngest advisor of the Pass Lord's residence. He was called Yi Sance.

He had deliberately demonstrated the majesty of the black eagle jade piece and had definitely did this out of the intention to flaunt a little bit. Everyone sitting here, was people of outstanding talent in the younger generation in Youyan pass . They were high class nobles and were normally a small group. Every member was somewhat arrogant. The scholarly educated young man, was the only one among them who held a position within the Pass Lord's residence, possessing a high status.

"Haha, it seems we have really overestimated the newly arrived

patrolling sword officer.” The educated young man Yi Sance faintly smiled. “According to my information, this Ye Qingyu, is just a small person from a common background. He is only a little student from White Deer academy that has not even graduated yet. The only reason he was able to obtain the beneficial position of patrolling sword envoy was that he was able to inherit a heroic brass badge from his parents. He could be said to have been extremely lucky....“

As everyone heard this, they were all taken aback.

“So it was like this. Haha, a person like that really caused me to not sleep well last night.” When Zhao Ruyun heard this, he was both embarrassed and angry. Such a little character, had really caused him to be restless throughout the night. Calling his friends so early morning, was really making a large issue out of a small problem. This time he had completely become a joke.

“I wonder what is his level of strength?” Another person was somewhat more cautious, enquiring for more information.

The educated young man lightly smiled, the black jade piece transforming into a bird shaped light, disappearing in the direction of the pass lord residence. Only then did he say: “Ye Qingyu, second year student of White Deer academy. Fifteen years old, and according to the most recent news, he is approximately between the third Spirit spring stage and the fourth spirit spring stage....”

“Third Spirit spring?”

“Second year?”

“Only fifteen?”

Everyone sitting there began laughing uproariously.

Within their laughter, was both contempt and disdain.

Such news, made them completely reassured.

If they were really slightly worried before, they did not have anything they needed to be afraid of right now. That's right, the position of the patrolling sword envoy was special, and they possessed real authority. But in the martial world, the personal martial strength of someone and the power of their family, would always be the most accurate measure to measure someone by.

And very evidently, in the eyes of these people, the patrolling sword envoy Ye Qingyu, did not fulfil the necessary standard.

“The White Horse tower is known as the Tower of death. Haha, it seems like the twenty second patrolling sword envoy will also be cursed to his death. This scene is going to appear very soon.” Lin Lang had completely relaxed.

Right now, he was somewhat regretful of the fact that he should not have acted so prudently at the Pass Lord's residence. If he long knew about Ye Qingyu's background, he would have definitely fiercely humiliated Ye Qingyu then. Perhaps if he did that, within Youyan pass, they would be spreading his fierce reputation everywhere right now.

Zhao Ruyun continuously sneered.

He had already began planning in his heart, whether he should send someone to recapture the White Horse sword slave Ye Qingyu had rescued.

Since Ye Qingyu did not have any status whatsoever, to play to death with a sword slave under his command was not something important at all. The most important thing was to regain his face. Otherwise, this time where he had made a fuss over nothing, would later become a joke and a point of mockery in their discussions.

“We were really far too sensitive. Our faces had been covered by ashes² by that brash idiot Wen Wan not long ago and hence we were far too careful. We have not exposed our claws and fangs in far too long a time. This has made people look down on us....” A young man with a black beard and leopard like eyes slammed on a table, loudly shouting. “I think this is an opportunity. We should single out this person called Ye Qingyu, to demonstrate our power. It will also allow the other factions of the military to realise, that the young group of Cool Breeze mountain, is not an entity easily messed with.”

The Youyan army was united on the surface but in reality, it was split into different factions. It was divided largely according to the area they were from. Although these factions did not fight to the death between each other, but a struggle for pride and glory within the army was unavoidable.

The Cool Mountain faction, could be counted as a solid faction within

Youyan pass. Lin Lang, Zhao Ruyun and the scholarly young man called Yi Sance belonged to the young group of this faction.

“That’s right If we endure this time, our faces will be completely lost.”

Other people also bellowed their grievances.

However, some people hesitated. “This is not right. As people of the military defending the same pass, we could be counted as comrades. Zhao Ruyun also had some matters where he was wrong, we should not try to escalate the situation. Both parties should take a step in retreat....”

Before that person had finished.

Lin Lang immediately became enraged, slapping the table and standing up.

“Haha, as a soldier, face and reputation is the most important thing. Little children talk about right and wrong, soldiers talk about the strong and the weak. Retreat, retreat, retreat, just where can we retreat to? Facing a little little trash, we have to retreat, do you have the slightest bravery if you? Without guts, how can you fight in the war and win?”

Zhao Ruyun also coldly sneered. “That’s right, Lin Lang’s words are not wrong. This time we must definitely do something, and make those who look at us like laughing stock revise their judgement. This will also make the new recruits who doesn’t know high the heavens are or how deep the earth is realise just who does Youyan pass belong to.....”

In this moment, the group was completely excited.

The military officers all became animated, a scorching flame burning in their hearts.

And at this time, the doors of the stone hall was loudly kicked open with a crash.

The clamour came to a spontaneous stop.

“Just what is happening?” Zhao Ruyun looked towards the doors, standing up with shock. Coldly snorting: “Where are the guards on duty? Did I not say, without my order, no one can enter?”

Pak!Pak!Pak!

The clear sound of applause sounded.

It was especially loud and clear in the stone hall.

“Well said, beautifully said. You have really opened my eyes.” A voice sounded, with the figure nowhere to be seen.

The first people to appear, were two armoured soldiers with red faces. Falling and crashing in, panting and covered with sweat, they did not know what to say.

Then, the piercing red sunset, shone from the door.

A silhouette, under this crimson red light of the setting sun entered. His entire body enveloped in radiance, he walked step by step inside. Standing at the door, he slowly clapped his hands.

The officers looked over, squinting their eyes.

Who was it?

The sunlight was piercing to the eyes. A faint shine came from the outline of this figure and the front of the figure was shrouded in the gloom of the light. The lighting was hazy and the features could not be clearly discerned. As if this person was covered in divine light and it was not possible for someone to look upon him directly.

“Good, well said, very well said. Listening to it just makes my blood boil. Haha, your words are entirely correct.”

The silhouette in the light, spoke slowly with a strange tone.

“Superior, we.....we couldn’t block him, he’s.....” A armoured soldier quickly came beside Zhao Ruyun. “He is the patrolling sword officer Ye Qingyu.”

As these words were said, the room fell completely silent.

As Cao Cao was mentioned, Cao Cao had arrived.³

To think that the person who had been completely mocked and insulted, would use such a method to appear in front of them.

The expression of the officers, instantly became marvellous to behold.

1. legendary Chinese creature. See link here for pictures and diagrams [↵](#)
2. to be placed in a sorry/embarrassed state [↵](#)
3. famous saying about Cao Cao, main villain in Romance of the Three kingdoms. Makes reference to the fact that as soon as Cao Cao was mentioned, he would shortly appear. [↵](#)

Chapter 137 – Just who do you think you are?

“I’ve disturbed you guys demonstrating your bravery?” Ye Qingyu laughed. “Really my apologies. You guys continue, I’m only here to find him.....” He lifted his finger to point at Zhao Ruyun. “That’s right, you. There’s a little matter I have to discuss.”

“What do you want?” Zhao Ruyun walked over with a cold smile. “I was just about to look for you, but you came my doorstep of your own volition?”

“Eh? You were looking for me?” Ye Qingyu widened his eyes in seriousness, curiously asking: “For what matter did you come looking for me for? Ah, I know, you must have realised that you were in the wrong, and wanted to apologise to me, isn’t that right?”

“Wrong? Apology?”

Zhao Ruyun was taken aback, then immediately burst into laughter.

Not only him, the entire military officers in the hall had the same reaction. After staring at each other, they began laughing uproariously with mockery evident on their faces.

“Little thing, has your brain been burnt and you’ve become retarded?” Zhao Ruyun did not disguise his disdain in the slightest. “Why should I apologise to you? Just who do you think you are?”

Ye Qingyu did not say anything .

He remembered the event a hour before. When Bai Yuanxing had finally awakened and his description of the conflict that happened on that day.

.....

.....

A hour before.

Inside White Horse tower.

“What? It was because you were breathing too loud?”

Within White Horse tower, as heard the answer of the White Horse sword slave, Ye Qingyu was completely dumbfounded by this retarded reason.

According to the description of Bai Yuanxing, on that day he was excited and jogged towards the military supply department to request the reinstatement of the stipend for White Horse tower. Because his body was weak, and he had ran too quickly, when he arrived at the supply department he was somewhat out of breath. He waited outside the door until he his breathing had recovered, then brought Ye Qingyu’s deputy seal to request the reinstatement. The military officer he encountered was namely Bai Yuanxing.

Zhao Ruyun had only glanced at Bai Yuanxing once. Then, he ordered people to fiercely beat Bai Yuanxing without allowing him to explain himself.

The reason was very simple.

The breathing of Bai Yuanxing was so loud that it made the allocation officer believe that this was an action of great disrespect towards him. It was a type of action that held the military supply department in contempt and was unforgivable. Not listening to Bai Yuanxing's begging or explanation, he ordered people to hang this pitiful sword slave on the [Punishment pillars] at the entrance of the supply department to be frozen alive.

“This is only an excuse.....” Bai Yuanxing lay on the bed, incomparably weak. “Because the White Horse tower has long been weak. I have previously been several times to the supply department asking for the stipend to be reinstated, but I have always been fiercely beaten.....This time, he intentionally made things difficult for me. Even if not for this, there would be other reasons.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

To be able to realise this point, this proved that Bai Yuanxing's personality was timid but his thinking was agile.

“I know. Rest well.”

Finishing saying this, he headed outside.

“Superior, you.....I’m fine, don’t go.....” Bai Yuanxing saw this and panicked. He was able to guess what Ye Qingyu was going to do, rushing to sit up. Panting roughly, he said : “I’m really fine....I’m only a tiny sword slave, superior you.....”

“Shut your mouth.”

Ye Qingyu fiercely turned around, and a never seen severity shone in his eyes.

Bai Yuanxing hesitated.

This was his first time seeing such an emotion in the eyes of this patrolling sword envoy.

“Bai Yuanxing remember well. You did nothing wrong, what are you afraid of? You are a person belonging to White Horse tower, you are a person belonging to me Ye Qingyu. From now on, lift up your head and stick your chest out. Don’t be faint hearted and gutless, I Ye Qingyu cannot command such a person.” Ye Qingyu’s tone was severe and strict. “Always giving in will just make people look down on you, and make them want to torment you even more. If you don’t want to suffer, then fiercely strike back at them.”

Bai Yuanxing was taken aback.

These years he borne countless humiliations to save his skin. For the

fulfilment of the wish of his ancestor, he was willing to accept any kind of humiliation.

He had never thought to change the way he lived, to put up any sort of struggle.

Because he felt he was far too lowly. In this icy cold world, if he made any sort of resistance, what met him was just a fierce beating and the possibility of losing his life.

If he died, then who would fulfil the wishes of his ancestor?

But at this moment, seeing the strict gaze of Ye Qingyu that he had never witnessed before, Bai Yuanxing was suddenly moved.

His first reaction was to avoid Ye Qingyu's eyes, wanting to lower his head. But he miraculously managed to bear it. Under this serious gaze like that of an interrogator, Bai Yuanxing felt something fiercely beating on his heart, nearly making him unable to breathe.

Perhaps, the protection that his ancestor wished for, was a protection done by lifting his head, a protection that was dignified and noble.

And it was not a protection done with a cowering and lowered head?

Bai Yuanxing suddenly realised something.

At that time, Ye Qingyu had already left.

“Your set of [Flowing light of the stars], the twenty four flying blades, were also confiscated by the military supply department?”

The voice, came from outside.

Bai Yuanxing was blank, immediately realising where he was going.

.....

.....

Military supply department, stone hall.

Ye Qingyu laughed. “I’m not any great character, I’m only here to discuss something.....Mm, I have two requests. The first, is that you apologise. The second, give me back the set of flying blades, [Flowing light of the stars].” He looked at the group with a smile. “How about it, isn’t this very reasonable?”

The officers looked at Ye Qingyu.

They felt that it was possible that the brain of this patrolling sword envoy laughing currently was not too clever.

Could it really be that he had still not understood just what kind of situation he was in?

He believed, that him alone, could suppress everyone at the scene?

Did he take the wrong medicine?

Zhao Ruyun began laughing loudly. “Little thing, I think you have really eaten the gall bladder of a leopard. To dare intrude on my place to cause trouble. Haha, I’ll ask you one more time: who do you think you are, to make me apologise?”

Ye Qingyu seemed as if he did not mind these words at all. “If it is like this, you refuse to apologise, and you also refuse to return the [Flowing light of the stars] that belongs to White Horse tower?”

The officers laughed together.

Lin Lan had laughed so much that his stomach was hurting. Holding his stomach in an exaggerated fashion, rubbing his eyes and slapping the table: “Hahaha, this is really too . In this world there is really such a stupid pig that I don’t even know he should be called, hahahaha.....apologise, everyone quickly apologise, hahaha, he is about to get angry.....”

The scholarly young man Yi Sance, also began shaking his head and chuckling.

“What mother fucking thing do you think you are, that you want us to apologise?” Zhao Ruyn said word by word. “As for that set of flying blades, just why is it something that belongs to White Horse Tower? It is

evidently something bought at a high price by us. Your lowly sword slave stole it somehow, and was captured by me on the spot with evidence on his body. I advise you to obediently return the lowly slave for him to accept his punishment....”

Before he had finished.

Ye Qingyu’s palm moved.

An two inch seal, like that of a cold arrow appeared in his hands.

He casually tossed it.

Ding!

The seal landed on the floor of the stone hall.

On the seal, the light of the image of two swords intersecting brightened. Then, light projected from the seal. Clear and cold light, enveloped the entire stone hall. The officers was taken aback, and felt an alarming and bizarre sensation like that of being surrounded by swords and blades

“Right now, I officially suspect, the allocation officer of the military supply department, Zhao Ruyun, of embezzling funds and provisions, bribery, abuse of soldiers, plunder of another’s belonging....” The smile on Ye Qingyu’s face disappeared, his expression instantly becoming chilling cold. “Right now, as the patrolling sword envoy, I order you to surrender, and accept investigation.”

As he said this, Ye Qingyu's hand casually swiped through the air.

The deputy seal of the military position, also fell to the ground, transforming into black shackles.

Zhao Ruyun was blank, the smile on his face disappearing.

Ye Qingyu had activated the seal of the military. This meant that the matter had escalated to the official military level.

The position of the patrolling sword envoy was special, and they did have the right to investigate the matters of the supply department.

And as for the crimes that he had just stated.....

“This is you trying to frame me, I.....” Zhao Ruyun jumped up in rage.

“Oh, you're not listening to military orders is it?” Ye Qingyu smiled for a bit, stepping out. Others only felt their vision blur. He appeared in an instant before Zhao Ruyun, his hands grabbing through the air. The shackles formed from the deputy seal automatically soared into his hands, and directly headed towards the arm of Zhao Ruyun.

“You dare?”

Zhao Ruyun was furious, his arm moving to avoid this attack. His hand was touching the long sword at his waist.

“You want to resist a military order?” Ye Qingyu had a laugh that was not a laugh, the light in his eyes chillingly icy.

“I.....hmpf, you have no evidence, and want to ruin my good name. Of course I need to resist. Such a matter, even if it is escalated to the Pass Lord’s residence, I am still in the right.” He grinded his teeth, pulling out the long sword at his waists, and immediately cold light surged out, yuan qi surging.

Thirteen yuan qi dragons, indistinct, began coalescing around Zhao Ruyun’s body.

He had a cold smile of disdain as he looked at Ye Qingyu.

According to the information contained in Yi Sance’s research, he knew that Ye Qingyu was just a martial expert of three Spirit springs.

And as for Zhao Ruyun exhibiting his thirteen yuan qi dragons, his reason behind this was very clear. He wanted to tell Ye Qingyu clearly, that he was thirteen Spirit springs, and his strength was many of times greater than him. So therefore; don’t pretend to be authoritative in front of me, and honestly scram off. Even if he used his official seal, he was just seeking his own humiliation.

Ye Qingyu had a calm expression, striking out once again.

The deputy seal once again headed towards Zhao Ruyun’s arm.

“You are looking to die.....”

As he saw that Ye Qingyu really did not intent retreat, Zhao Ruyun could not bear it any longer. The long sword in his hands quivered, vibrating and transforming into sword lights, the tip of the blade like the brilliance of the stars. It headed towards the wrist of Ye Qingyu that held the seal.

After one of your hands is crippled, lets see if you are still so fierce.

Within Zhao Ruyun’s eyes, killing intent flourished.

The educated young man Yi Sance, seeing this scene, hesitated for a moment, but did not act to stop him.

As for the other military officers, they only coldly sneered, waiting to see Ye Qingyu being made fun of.

And as the tip of the blade was about to descend on the veins of Ye Qingyu’s wrist, as everyone felt that the next moment blood would spurt everywhere, Ye Qingyu’s wrist, lightly and faintly moved. Extending his middle finger, with a light ping, he lightly flicked the tip of the oncoming sword.

Ding!

The light hum of the sword sounded.

As everyone could not yet clearly see what had occurred, Zhao Ruyun let out an exclamation, instantly retreating.

The figures instantly separated.

“You....” Zhao Ruyun face was full of shock.

The sword in his hands was rapidly vibrating, as if it was a fiercely struggling python. The sword constantly emitted the hums of it shaking. In the air, there was a strange sound wave that spread out. No matter how Zhao Ruyun tried to suppress the sword, the blade of the sword would not settle down.

Ye Qingyu's expression was smiling yet not smiling as he looked towards Zhao Ruyun.

Zhao Ruyun bit his teeth, both hands gripping his sword. The thirteen yuan qi dragons became even clearer, inserting yuan qi into his arm, wanting to use his full strength to suppress the vibration of the sword blade.

But—

“Pok!”

He suddenly opened his mouth and spat out a jet of blood, the skin of his flesh breaking apart at his hands, fresh blood dripping from it. The sword could be held no longer. Flying out from his hands, it nailed itself onto the stone beam above. And as for the rapid shaking, it still vibrated

without stopping.

“Right now, do you know just what mother fucking thing I am?”

Ye Qingyu looked at Zhao Ruyun.

Chapter 138 – Hang him for six hours

Zhao Ruyun stared at Ye Qingyu in fear.

Both his hands were nearly crippled. The skin on it had broken apart and the flesh were lacerated. His veins and white bones were exposed. He had already lost all sensation in them, as if his hands did not belong to himself any longer.

The sword was still stabbed into the stone beam, not stopping in its vibration.

Ye Qingyu had only lightly flicked it with his finger. To think that the force of that movement would be this powerful. Zhao Ruyun had thirteen Spirit springs of strength, yet his sword blade was shaking to such an extent that he could not suppress it. Rather, the vibrations had shuddered his arms till it bled and ripped apart.....

“It seems right now, you know just who I mother fucking am.” Ye Qingyu looked at the fearful and shocked face of Zhao Ruyun. Throwing the deputy seal that had been turned into shackles in front of Zhao Ruyun, he said: “Don’t make me say it three times. Wear it yourself.”

The figure of Zhao Ruyun instinctively quivered.

“You are not.....you should only have three Spirit springs, you.....” Zhao Ruyun constantly retreated.

“Eh? You have spent an entire three days and you only managed to find out such information?” Ye Qingyu shrugged his shoulders. “I’m sorry, I’ve made you disappointed. Your news seems to be out of date already.”

“Just how.....just how strong are you?” Zhao Ruyun knew in his heart that the situation was far from good.

“You guess.” Ye Qingyu was smiling but not smiling, shaking his head. “If you can’t guess it, then I won’t tell you.

Zhao Ruyun opened his mouth.

He had a sensation of complete collapse.

The other military officers stared at each other.

And at this instant, without knowing why, a phrase appeared in their hearts——

Playing the fool and feigning madness.

From the beginning, this newly appointed patrolling sword envoy Ye Qingyu, acted as if he was a idiot child rookie that did not know the rules. In the midst of the mocking laughter of everyone, he stated his requests with a smile. And just when everyone expected Zhao Ruyun to settle this stupid patrolling sword envoy, the situation instantly flipped around.....

Someone turned their heads, to look at scholarly young man Yi Sance.

Very evidently, even if Yi Sance had borrowed the power of the Pass Lord residence, he had not managed to discover Ye Qingyu's true power.

Zhao Ruyun with his thirteen Spirit springs, was defeated in an instant by Ye Qingyu's one finger. This was not something that a student of White Deer academy that only had three Spirit springs outlined in the report could do.

Yi Sance continued to tightly frown, not saying anything.

He was also some what stupefied.

According to reason, it was not possible for the information channels of the Pass Lord's residence to be wrong.

Within, just where had the mistake been made?

A person that even the Pass Lord residence were not able to investigate fully, then, just how terrifying was his background?

Only a slight thought was enough to make someone's heart cold,

And within the group, the guerilla officer's expression was even worse than having eaten shit. Furtively, he retreated. At this moment, he hated the fact he could not tear apart his own mouth. If he long knew the terrifying power of Ye Qingyu, he absolutely would not have said

anything. As he recalled what he did, his intentional exaggerated laughter was equivalent to an elderly person ingesting poison – disliking the fact that they had lived a long life.

Lin Lang prayed in his heart, that Ye Qingyu did not notice him.

But it seemed like the prayers had an opposite effect.

Because in the next instant, Ye Qingyu's gaze descended upon him.

Lin Lang quivered fiercely, and forced a smile that was hard to behold on his face. "I..."

Ye Qingyu also looked at him with a smile that was not a smile. "How about it? Do you feel right now that I am very funny?"

Lin Lan shook his head like a drum shaped rattle.

Ye Qingyu snorted with disdain, his expression becoming severe, and mercilessly insulted him. "A coward without any guts. Such a gutless little ghost, just how did they become a guerilla officer? How do you command soldiers to fight in the war? No wonder Wen WAn looks down on you. To have ran from the battle field, scam to one side. If you stand in my eyesight, you'll make my mood even worse."

Every word and every phrase, was like a spear or blade, cruelly stabbing onto Lin Lang's body.

Lin Lang's face was ashen white, shivering. But ultimately he did not dare to even say one word in retaliation, moving to the side.

Ye Qingyu completely did not pay attention him, his gaze once again returning to Zhao Ruyun's face. Coldly smiling: "Are you going to put on the shackles yourself, or do you need my help?"

Zhao Ruyun shuddered.

A patrolling sword envoy with low strength, had no authority whatsoever, and was not even worth mentioning.

But a patrolling sword envoy with terrifying power, was absolute a character that made people fear whenever they laid eyes on him.

Right now, he absolutely regretted everything. That day, he should not have been greedy for the set of flying blades [Flowing light in the stars] and beat the White Horse sword slave so cruelly.

"I....I....." Zhao Ruyun's face was a vivid white, biting his teeth. "I am willing to return the thirty six flying blades, and in this matter, I accept I was in the wrong."

Ye Qingyu chuckled.

"I gave you a choice, but you did not choose. Right now, you don't have a choice anymore. " Ye Qingyu did not have the slightest intention to reach a compromise, pressing forward step by step. "This is fine too, I don't want to take advantage of you. Hang yourself on the [Punishment

pillars] for six hours, and this matter will be said to have passed. ”

“You....” Zhao Ruyun’s complexion began to be tinged with the red of rage, and in a low voice he said angrily: “Don’t push things too far.”

Ye Qingyu smiled. “As you please. If you don’t want to hang yourself, then I’ll seal away your inner yuan and hang you myself. It is just the same.”

As he said this, he prepared to act.

Zhao Ruyun widened his eyes and stepped backwards. “Everyone, could it be that you are just going to watch? Today he will stamp on my face, tomorrow he will stamp on your head. If he hangs me on the [Punishment pillar], then the face of the Cool breeze mountain faction is completely lost. In the future, in the military, can you guys still lift your heads up high?”

As these words were said, the expression of the military officers changed.

Especially the furious black bearded burly man with leopard eyes that had previously spoken. “Brother Zhao words are correct. Today either he dies or we live. Everyone charge together, even if it is escalated in front of the Pass Lord, we are in the right with so many people. Could it be that we are afraid of him?”

As he said this, he took a large stride and pressed closer, the yuan qi light around him activating.

Ye Qingyu laughed loudly. “A bunch of retards gathering together, treating themselves as the heroes of the military. They are shameless enough to claim they are brave. You really want to make someone laugh until their teeth falls out. Arrogance and braggery, little clowns that jump on a ledge.....I peh, good, good, good. You group of rookies, just charge together all together at once.”

As he said this, he took a stride forward.

His figure was extremely quick. Nearly in an instant, he appeared in front of the burly man, and lifted his hand to form a punch..

“To compete in strength with me....” The burly military officer coldly smiled, similarly striking with a punch in return.

Boom!

An explosive turbulence surged.

His cold smile froze, then he was directly struck flying backwards.

The burly man’s figure was like a sack being sent flying backwards. Crushing stone chairs and tables on his path, he could not stop, finally fiercely hitting the wall of the stone hall. Then he spat out a jet of blood, his body becoming completely soft and limp.

He could not even withstand one strike by Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu waved his hands, not stopping. His figure flashing, he came in front of another military officer.

His silhouette, was like a ghost, extremely rapid. Because of the high speed, his silhouette became somewhat blurred, and in the air there was vague after images.

The military officers could not react. One after another, they were struck under their chins, directly sent flying.

Pak!

The military officers struck the wall of the stone hall, the hall fiercely shaking.

And nearly at the same time, Lin Lang felt his vision blurring. The figure of Ye Qingyu ten metres away was still there, but in front of him was bizarrely another silhouette of Ye Qingyu.

Lin Lang instinctively felt a chill, then felt a numbness in his chin, being sent soaring.

Within the air, he was able to see an even more shocking scene.

Within the stone hall, there were suddenly four or five Ye Qingyu that appeared, constantly punching out. And the other military officers, apart from the scholarly officer Yi Sance, was struck flying by Ye Qingyu's

punches without exception.

Because his speed was too fast, he left behind after images.

Ye Qingyu's speed had already exceeded the limits of vision of a normal person.

Only the Yi Sance with twenty three Spirit springs, managed to barely block Ye Qingyu's fist. But when hit, his entire person was also sent backwards. Consecutively crushing three tables, his back pressed against the stone pillar of the hall. All of a sudden, he used technique to divert the force of Ye Qingyu's fist, completely transferring it onto the stone pillar behind him. With a light sound of friction, a crack appeared in the stone pillar behind him.....

Even if so, Yi Sance felt the blood in his chest roiling, nearly spurting out a jet of blood.

And at the same time, the four or five after images of Ye Qingyu in the hall, quickly transformed back into one person.

"The [Flowing light of the stars], just where is it?" Ye Qingyu looked towards Zhao Ruyun.

Zhao Ruyun had long been scared witless, not even daring to say a word of rebuttal. Rushing, from the dimensional pouch on his body he took the blades sheath made from beast skin. The thirty six flying blades was all held within.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, stowing away the set of flying blades.

He extended his hand, the deputy seal transforming into shackles. With a click, it was locked onto the hands of Zhao Ruyun.

Zhao Ruyun was about to resist, and could immediately see Ye Qingyu lowering his head and giving him a glance. His expression calm and peaceful, he said.: “Go, go go, go resist....I’ve long wanted to play with you to your death. I only need an excuse. Go, don’t make me disappointed.”

Zhao Ruyun was dumbfounded.

The patrolling sword officer had the power to first execute then report amongst the middle level officers.

If Ye Qingyu really wanted to kill him, he did not have to pay any sort of price whatsoever for it.

As he thought of this, Zhao Ruyun heart turned icy cold.

The shackle formed from the deputy seal the formation patters began activating, like a pattern of light, surging with dim golden lines of lights. Entering into Zhao Ruyun skin, it completely sealed away his meridians. His inner yuan was not allowed to activate and hence his strength was not able to be released....

Ye Qingyu did not say anything more. Turning and bringing Zhao Ruyun away, he left the hall under the gaze of the other officers.

Xiu!

And as for the official seal on the floor, it transformed into light that flew back into Ye Qingyu's hands.

Outside the hall , there were hundreds of armoured soldiers holding spears surrounding the hall. They were completely cautious and prepared. As they saw Ye Qingyu coming out, every spear pointed at him. The tip of the blades were icy cold, the white coloured blades flickering, killing intent permeating the air.

Ye Qingyu only smiled, and brought the Zhao Ruyun who did not struggle in the slightest away. He walked straight at them.

The armoured soldiers did not dare not to retreat.

When he reached the gates of the supply department, Ye Qingyu lifted Zhao Ruyun and flew through the air. He secured him on top of an ice pillar.

“Only after fulfilling six hours, is he allowed be let off. If you dare release him before his time is up, then I'll personally come and hang him once again. If you come down early, for every breath that you come down early by, I'll hang you for another two hours.” Ye Qingyu returned to the ground. Within the scene of being surrounded by hundreds of armoured soldiers, he lightly clapped his hands, turning and leaving.

The hundreds soldiers of the supply department did not dare block

him.

The officers who had rushed out of the stone hall did not dare to take any actions whatsoever. They only stared at Ye Qingyu as he disappeared far away.

One person, was enough to suppress an entire department.

One person, was enough to win against hundred.◦

They knew, that today they had completely made an error.

The Cool Breeze mountain faction that was a middling power, had completely lost.

And even if they wanted to take revenge later, this was not a simple matter.

And as for the patrolling sword officer called Ye Qingyu, from today onwards, he would likely attract the attention of all parties. Such a forceful patrolling sword envoy, was an existence they had to be wary of, no matter who the person was.

Chapter 139 – Suspicion

On the returning path back, Ye Qingyu's mood was much better.

“I really can't understand, Zhao Ruyun and those other people, why can't they just properly perform the role of a military officer? Why must they cause such a ruckus, and make people hit their faces?” Ye Qingyu shook his head. “Do they really have pig brains? Every soldier should be clear on what the role of a patrolling sword envoy is, yet they must come and incite me....”

Because of such people, Ye Qingyu felt sorrowful.

Previously when he was at White Deer academy, he had felt that the schemes and machinations between the noble families had nearly caused Deer city to completely rot. It did not have the drive or unity of days gone past. The so called uniting and resisting against the demon race together, to protect the survival of their race, seemed to be more like a joke.

Ye Qingyu had originally thought, that such things, would not happen in the army.

It would especially not happen in such an important military frontier.

But from the current situation, it really made him disappointed.

Within Youyan pass, it was yet still the fights and struggles between factions. The so called noble families, the backbone of the young guard,

their conduct was no different from the noble families within Deer city. They still emitted the smell of rotting decay. It was completely different from Ye Qingyu's initial imagination where everyone was united, and the atmosphere was sincere and harmonious.

And such was the things Ye Qingyu encountered by coincidence despite being here for less than ten days.

If he stayed here even longer, would he meet up with things even more shocking than this?

As he thought of this, Ye Qingyu could not but sigh.

If the army of Youyan pass, had people like Zhao Ruyun and Lin Lang, just how could they protect the frontier that was of utmost importance to the country? Just how long could it remain protected for?

Sooner or later, there would most likely be a day where the Pass would be broken past by the Snow Ground demon court?

Ye Qingyu lifted his head to look at the colour of the sky.

Snow flakes again floated through the air.

“The ten days of temporary rest is about to end. Three days later, I will officially take over this position, patrolling inside and outside Youyan pass.”

Ye Qingyu suddenly felt, that to be appointed as the patrolling sword envoy, was a fortunate matter. At least, if he wanted to do something to change the situation in the Pass, then the position of patrolling sword envoy made this much more convenient. He could do as he wished for many things.

“Then lets try. As a member of the human race, I can’t just go along with the tides. My parents died in the battle to protect Deer city. I will not allow their military badge to become shamed.”

“Even if I cannot reverse the tides in this crisis, but I must at least become a cornerstone in the Pass. The gutless and degeneration of others, cannot become the excuse for my retreat. Even if it is extremely difficult, I still have to forge ahead. I must believe, that scum like Zhao Ruyun, is only in the minority. Hard and stubborn men like Wen Wan are the true soldiers. This is where the true hope of the continuation of the human race lies.”

Ye Qingyu walked amidst the snowy wind, his will becoming more and more determined.

After thinking through this point, all the negative emotions in his heart was completely swept away. His mood became pure and clean.

The yuan qi in his body, as if he could sense Ye Qingyu’s mood, immediately flowed much smoother than before.

A faint smile appeared on Ye Qingyu’s face.

“The control of inner yuan in my body, has yet again increased to another level. If previously, I had only barely managed to control my fifteen Spirit springs of inner yuan, then right now I could be said to be well practiced in controlling it. ” As he walked, he attempted to activate his inner yuan. As expected, the flow of inner yuan in his body had become much more smooth, with it being much more easy to control.

“The martial heart....that’s right, a martial artist not only has to train his body, his qi, he also has to train his heart. Only when his heart has completely integrated, can his martial path be completely integrated.”

Ye Qingyu faintly felt, that he had begun to come into contact with a new door in the martial path.

An expert, was first and foremost a human.

A human, had a heart.

If his heart was not complete, no matter what martial path they cultivated in, it would not be complete.

“The battle just now with Zhao Ruyun and the others, can be counted as an important experience in fighting. Amongst those officers, that scholarly young man’s strength is above twenty Spirits Springs. Only by activating the [First limit] of the [Limitless divine way] could I defeat him.....This is the first time after I’ve came into contact with the profoundness of the [Limitless divine way] that I truly utilised the [Limitless divine way] in real practical battle. It is definitely amazing. If not for grasping this divine ability, the person who would be hung on the [Punishment pillar] would have been myself.”

Thinking back to the previous battle, Ye Qingyu had really been lucky.

But this battle, was the first true martial battle he had after his strength had multiplied.

From Ye Qingyu's perspective, it seemed like he had completely suppressed his opponents. But the understanding and comprehension he was able to harvest from this battle, was really significant.

It was enough for him to slowly recall and ponder over in the next three or four days.

.....

A hour later.

Ye Qingyu returned to White Horse tower.

The White Horse sword slave Bai Yuanxing was in a wheelchair pushed by the servant girl, silently and patiently waiting at the doors.

Only until he saw Ye Qingyu coming back with no injuries at all, could Bai Yuanxing let out a breath of relief.

He was not aware of what had occurred in the military supply department. But from superior Ye Qingyu's facial expression, it seemed like something good had occurred?

“Superior.” Bai Yuanxing wanted to stand up.

Ye Qingyu pressed down on his shoulder. “Return and rest. In the future, there will be many matters that I will rely on you for. Right now, the most important matter is for your injuries to quickly recover. I can’t stay everyday within White Deer tower to take care of you.”

Bai Yuanxing was horrified at the thought of this.

He quickly asked the servant girl to push himself back to his own room.

Ye Qingyu ascended the stairs to the four floor, sitting at the prayer mat before the window. As he looked at the inky black night outside and the snowstorm that was becoming more and more violent, he activated the nameless heart sutra. Absorbing the yuan qi in heaven and earth, he began cultivating his heart and qi.

The Ye Qingyu who was completely concentrated in cultivating, did not know, that in this inky black icy night, there were countless people that were currently agitated.

The matter that occurred in the stone hall, before Ye Qingyu had even returned to the White Horse tower, began spreading out at a crazy speed.

.....

.....

Pass Lord Residence.

In the saffron yellow light of the formation lantern, in a room on the third floor of the Military council pavilion, nothing was left unlit.

A lean faced middle aged man, was currently bent over his desk, reading through scrolls.

On the mahogany desk, there was a small mountain of scrolls.

As the middle aged man evaluated the scrolls, his cinnabar red brush would constantly annotate these scrolls. Sometime he would frown, sometimes he would laugh, his movements elegant. The speed at which he read each scroll was extremely rapid. Every time he finished a scroll, he would once again place it back to its position according to the categories. Everything was ordered and organised.

A boy with his hair in a little bun, stood next to the desk. While he grinded the ink, he also covered his mouth and yawned, seeming to be extremely tired.

“Mister, it’s going to be the latter half of the night soon. You should rest early.” The boy reminded the middle aged man from beside him.

The middle aged man smiled: “No rush, no rush.”

The boy pressed his lips together. “Mister you are not in a rush, but

Xinger I can nearly withstand it no longer. You are working to such an hour again, if this is known by the Pass Lord, he will definitely punish Xinger again.” As he said this, the boy went over, grabbing the arm of the middle aged man, pulling him away, not allowing him to continue reading the scrolls.

The middle aged man helplessly smiled, shaking his head: “I’ve really spoiled you. Fine, fine, fine, lets rest for tonight.....”

Before he had finished.

Tap.Tap.Tap.

The sound of knocking came.

A silver armoured warrior entered, both his hands holding a dim golden coloured scroll. He presented it in front of the middle aged man.

The boy’s expression instantly changed the moment he saw the colour of the scroll.

The laughter on the middle aged man disappeared completely in this instant. Lifting his hand, an invisible energy grasped the dim gold scroll and placed it within his hands.

The silver armoured warrior went out, shutting the door from outside.

The middle aged man opened the scroll, his eyes scanning. His first

expression was surprise, then he lightly shook his head. A complicated expression flashed by through his face.

The boy could not help but stand on tip toes, curiously asking. “Mister, the golden scroll has already not appeared for months of time. Just what is written on it? Is it that the snow ground demon court has taken some new actions?”

The middle aged man gave him a glance. “Do you still remember the young man that came to report from White Deer academy several days ago?”

The boy nodded his head. “Is it that little kid called Ye Qingyu? I have some impression. Hehe, he seems somewhat stupid, wooden and slow. I guess that he won’t have a good time in his days at Youyan pass.....but, could it be, that on the dim golden scroll, is information about him? I’ve already had a look at his previous scrolls. He’s only a little fellow at the three Spirit springs stage.....”

The middle aged man shook his head. “This time, Mister I have overlooked something. Xinger you have also overlooked something.”

As he said this, he handed the dim golden scroll to the boy.

The dim golden scroll, represented information that was extremely confidential within Youyan pass. Even if it was military officers or leaders at the middle level, they did not possess the requirement to read the contents of the scroll. Apart from the Pass Lord Lu Zhaoge, only the confidant advisers within the [Military council pavilion] had right of access. The middle aged man’s surname was Liu. He was namely the

Mister Liu that had received Ye Qingyu on the day he arrived. Xinger was a little student that he kept beside him. To so casually give such a secret and confidential scroll for him to read, one was able to see how much he trusted and spoiled Xinger.

Xinger laughingly took the scroll, glancing through it several times. “The young guard of the Cool breeze mountain, although they can’t amount to much, at least there are several notable characters within that group. Especially advisor Yi Sance, he can definitely be ranked in the top hundred of officers under forty years of age. Pass Lord admires him very much, and therefore allowed him to enter the residence. Who would have thought that he would be fiercely beaten in his face by Ye Qingyu. This newly arrived patrolling sword envy, really doesn’t show his true colours.”

Mister Liu slowly stood up, stretching his back, then said: “The report of the Pass Lord residence cannot be wrong. One month ago, this Ye Qingyu was really at the level of three Spirit springs. After disappearing for a month and coming back, he can already completely dominate the advisor Yi Sance who is at twenty three Spirit springs just by raising his hands.....if my guess is not wrong, there must be something that has happened in this month, to cause this transformation. This allowed Ye Qingyu’s strength to explosively increase.”

“In just one month of time, his power can increase by that much?” On the fair little face of Xinger, an incredulous expression was seen. “That can’t be too possible? This is far too universally shocking.....”

“There are far too many inexplicable matters in this world. If my memory serves me correctly, the demon race has a technique, that can allow a person’s strength to increase tens of times in a short amount of time.....” On Mister Liu’s face, he had a seriousness that was never seen

before.

Xinger covered his mouth: “Mister, are you suspecting, that Ye Qingyu is connected to the demon race?”

Mister Liu nodded his head. “Precautions must be taken.”

“But.....” Xinger hesitated. “But he is an inheritor of a heroic military badge, how could he.....”

Mister Liu sighed. “Therefore such a matter, must be handled carefully. In these years, the snow ground demon court is beginning to stir. The chaotic situation at the frontier is becoming more and more impossible to unravel. The treachery of the demon race must be guarded against.....I will prepare to go see the Pass Lord. You can follow me along to see him.”

Chapter 140 – The notoriety of a tool

Youyan pass, Vanguard camp.

Within the army of Youyan Pass, the Vanguard possessed the strongest attacking and invasive power. In the main battle force, within the four great camps, the vanguard was unquestionably the one with the greatest fame.

The number of people in the Vanguard, was also the greatest.

According to normal arrangements, for the Vanguard, there were forty warfare officers. The number of soldiers under each officer's command was not the same. Those that were strong could easily command five hundred, and those with lacklustre ability could only command around two hundred. But in these years, as the relationship between Snow country and the Snow ground demon court became more and more tense, there were more and more frictions, The vanguard had already been expanded three times, with now over a hundred warfare officers. The normal soldiers were three or four times that of its normal numbers.

Wen Wan had arrived in Youyan pass for less than half a year of time.

But even within the hundreds of warfare officers in the Vanguard, he was already well known and famous.

Not only was this because Wen Wan's personal strength was exceptional, he had already fought in several marvellous battles where he annihilated the enemy. His troops, the [Silver armoured soldiers] also

became famous through such battles. It caused ordinary snow ground demon race to smell the wind and lose their courage¹. Because of his forceful temperament, if he saw things that he did not like, he would definitely interfere. On the battlefield, he fought without regard to his life and outside the battlefield, he had even more fearlessly contradicted the commander of the Vanguard, Liu Siufeng. He was known as both the [Violent officer] and the [Brash officer].

Very many people saw Wen Wan as the new star of the Vanguard camp.

Even Liu Siufeng, the commander in chief of the Vanguard who Wen Wan had a small conflict with, had even once privately indicated that he admired this fierce warrior very much.

According to normal development, the rise of Wen Wan was something that would happen sooner or later.

But who could have guessed, that three days ago, the military authority of Wen Wan was taken away. He was captured by the disciplinary squad of the Vanguard camp.

For what reason?

No one could explain.

Even the camp of the silver armoured soldiers was being watched over by experts.

These silver armoured men with white helmets had followed behind

Wen Wan to fight for hundreds of battles. They were utterly loyal to their leader. Ever since Wen Wan's military position was taken from him, these two hundred and twenty men had not rested, but they also did not riot or protest. They only sat silently within their camp, anxiously waiting for the return of their commander.

Within the night air, the snow became greater and greater.

The chilling wind were like blades.

This was the fourth night that Wen Wan had been captured.

At the temporary resting place of the disciplinary squad of the vanguard.

Four steel pillars three meter high were deeply embedded onto the ground in a formation. The formations carved on these pillars was activated, creating an invisible energy field in the air. It prevented all observation from the outside, enveloping the entire disciplinary squad of the vanguard inside.

If you were outside and was watching from far away, you could only see the rippling light. There was no way to discern what was exactly on the inside. One could only see the vague shape of three black tents.

[Four dragon light prison].

This was the metal formation that the disciplinary squad used to hold and interrogate criminal suspects.

Once the four formation pillars was buried under the ground, and the formation activated, it would warp even light itself. If you were under the Bitter Sea stage and trapped within, this was absolutely something you could not escape from.

One could say the disciplinary squad was a character that everyone in the Vanguard fear. Similar in role to the patrolling sword envoy, they were the high watchers of Youyan pass. The disciplinary squad was the black faced judge of the Vanguard. No matter whether it was a soldier or an officer, once they caught the eye of the disciplinary squad, there was a ninety nine percent chance they would be found suspect. In many cases, once you were invited into the [Four dragon light prison], it signified that your career in the future was completely finished.

No military officers judged by the disciplinary team had ever been spared.

When they saw that Wen Wan was forced into the [Four dragon light prison], the entire vanguard was shaken.

Some people were delighted.

Some people were suspicious.

Some people sighed.

Of course, there were some that didn't care.

And as for the person who did not care the most, he was Wen Wan himself.

He did not have the attitude of other military officers when the disciplinary squad arrived. He did not exhibit a fearful expression like the apocalypse had arrived. Instead, Wen Wan possessed the countenance of a curious spectator. He walked step by step into the [Four dragon light prison] and curiously extended his hands to touch the formation pillar, a smile cracking open at his mouth.

Such a performance, made the man who led this group of disciplinary soldiers, sit up and take notice

“You’re not afraid?” Zhou Yinan asked Wen Wan curiously.

“Why should I be afraid?” Wen Wan against expectations, had a countenance like that of a curious baby, widening his eyes and looking at Zhou Yinan.

Zhou Yinan said with a smile: “Because apart from you, every military officer that entered the [Four dragon light prison] no matter whether they are a noble officer with deep family background, they would be shivering in fear. I have seen far too many people’s mentality completely collapsing in the instant they enter into the [Four dragon light prison]. Some cry and go crazy, some weep bitterly, and there are some that insult and curse. The ultimate reason for this behaviour is fear. But this is my first time witnessing someone bringing a smile when they entered.

Wen Wen slapped his chest, chuckling loudly: “Your father I has done no wrong, so there is no need to be afraid. Besides.....”

As he said this, the fellow mysteriously whispered near the ear of Zhou Yinan: “And to tell you honestly, I am person with an extremely great background. Today you guys will capture me, but very quickly you will respectfully release and see me off.”

Zhou Yinan hesitated, then immediately smiled faintly. “Then I can only wish you good luck.”

During these days, Zhou Yinan had always carefully observed Wen Wan.

When the disciplinary squad interrogated someone, they would basically use torture, making someone feel so much pain they did not want to live anymore. But under Zhou Yinan’s directions, this time their attitude towards Wen Wan was much gentler. There were basically no great tortures used and only occasionally throwing a punch or two his way. This was the reason that this fellow was still so arrogant and mouthy

Therefore throughout these days, the disciplinary squad still had not managed to obtain any sort of information.

Outside the large tent.

Zhou Yinan with black armour all over his body and a long sword at his waist, stood within the snow storm, deep in thought.

“Superior, if we don’t use the great tortures, this goes against

regulations. ” A member of the disciplinary squad spoke in a low voice beside Zhou Yinan.

Zhou Yinan did not say anything.

Without knowing why, the instant he arrested Wen Wan, he felt that this matter was definitely not as simple as it was on the surface. Although the order was personally passed down by the captain of the disciplinary squad, but Zhou Yinan's intuition told him to not take things too far with Wen Wan. Perhaps for himself, perhaps for the entire disciplinary squad, this would prove beneficial.

“Superior, superior?” The member of the disciplinary team continued to speak beside his ear. “The time of five days is about to pass. The captain personally issued this case. If we continue to tarry, I fear there will be consequences.”

Zhou Yinan turned his head and gave him a glance, hesitating for a bit. He then said: “Wait for a little longer.”

The disciplinary member hearing this, shook his head, not saying anything more.

The disciplinary squad of the Vanguard was split into six groups. All these groups were under the command of the captain. Zhou Yinan was the leader of the fourth group, and in these years, he had solved many cases. But because his personality was far too straightforward and unbending he had not been promoted in these years. His footsteps had stopped and remained stationary. The members who followed him to solve cases, were the same people again and again, also without

prospects for much development.

At this time, a strange change occurred.

As a strange roiling noise sounded, one could see the light screen at the exterior [Four dragoon light prison] shuddering. A door of light appeared.

Two people came from the outside.

The person at the lead was somewhat skinny and short, not even one metre six. Wearing a black robe, he had a beard and a dark complexion. He did not emit any sort of imposing manner whatsoever, but his entire person gave off a gloomy and ruthless aura. As if the air around him was warping, he gave an incomparably strange feeling. Even the heart of someone looking at him for the first time, would palpitate unwillingly with fear.

There was a young man following behind him. With a eagle shaped nose, and a treacherous face, he was a man under Zhou Yinan's command, the disciplinary soldier Kang Yu.

“Superior!”

“We pay respects to the superior.”

Zhou Yinan and the others quickly rushed to pay their respects.

This thin and short middle aged man, was namely the captain of the disciplinary squad, Lai Junchen.

“No need.” Lai Junchen’s face had a smile. “How goes the interrogation of the suspect?”

Zhou Yinan hesitated, lowering his head. “This.....I still cannot find anything of use.”

“Did you not manage to interrogate anything of use, or did you not interrogate at all?” Lai Junchen asked with a laugh that was not a laugh.

Zhou Yinan did not dare to say anything.

The moment he saw Kang Yu, he knew that matters had not progressed according to his plan.

The young man called Kang Yu, was originally a disciplinary member that he had did his utmost to nourish and develop. But later on, he discovered that this young man chased after immediate rewards, favouring extreme methods. If it benefited him, he did not care about the truth at all. As a result of this, afterwards Zhou Yinan gradually distanced himself from Kang Yu, becoming estranged. It seemed like Kang Yu had brought the captain Lai Junchen over here, running to Lai Junchen’s place to report him for what he had done.

“I am really curious, just what kind of person he is, that you Zhou Yinan don’t dare interrogate.” Lai Juncheng had his eyes squinted, without any obvious display of happiness or rage. “Fine, if you don’t want

to interrogate, then I won't make things hard on you. Just leave this matter it for Kang Yu to handle.

Kang Yu's expression immediately showed delight.

He knew that his opportunity had arrived.

Accepting the order, he headed towards the large tent holding Wen Wan.

Zhou Yinan still wanted to say something, but Lai Junchen waved his hands quickly, indicating for him to not speak anymore.

"I know of your intentions. Wen Wan can be counted as a fierce warrior and sparing him will have definite benefits for the Pass. But such a matter, is not a decision that can be made by you or me....." Without anyone else around, the Lai Junchen that was known as a butcher within the Pass, displayed a rare patience for the first time. "Yinan, you must be clear, in such turbulent and troubled times, humans are like dogs. We are just the dogs of the army. Those who we bite and don't bite, these are often things that we can decide for ourselves. Whether Wen Wan is deserving of his punishment does not matter; you can't protect him and neither can I. Everything will be gone when he leaves. You don't want to be an evil person, then let Kang Yu bear that crime. I still have great trust in you."

"Superior." Zhou Yinan had a face of someone emotionally moved. "Why must you make things so hard for yourself, in reality,.....I have always known, that superior you are in a difficult situation. Others only see you causing bloody scenes within the army, but they don't know

about your well meaning intentions. It is namely your methods, that has suppressed and shocked the restless nobles in the army. It is what allows the Youyan pass to be like a steel board. There is no need for you to explain, it is only that.....”

Lai Junchen slapped Zhou Yinan on the shoulder, bitterly smiling.

1. Become afraid when they heard his name ↵

Chapter 141 – Let's negotiate

This person had always been known as the butcher of the army. Lai Junchen felt that Zhou Yinan was very much like himself when he began, with perseverance and hesitation. Zhou Yinan's heart was brimming with contradictions, but every time he handled a case give his utmost. He was not afraid of offending someone and somewhat soft hearted. Therefore, he had especially looked upon Zhou Yinan with favour. There were many instances where Zhou Yinan had offended his superiors yet Lai Junchen had not punished him for this.

Even Lai Junchen himself, did not know, just what kind of thinking this was.

Was he hoping that Zhou Yinan would not become like himself, neglecting right and wrong and only caring about results? Or did he hope that Zhou Yinan was able to maintain his current state, bringing a light breeze within the disciplinary squad? Did he hope that Zhou Yinan would not become like the others of the disciplinary squad, where there were no difference between them and a tool?

He was about to say something, when another strange change occurred.

Outside of the [Four dragon light prison], the strange whistle of a sword sounded.

The colour of Lai Junchen's face changed. His finger pointed out, and an oval door opened on the formation light screen. A silver sword light,

passed through the oval door. In an instant, it appeared in front of Lai Junchen and Zhou Yinan, transforming into a little sword the width of a finger, floating in mid air. Rotating, there were strange formations activating around the little green sword.

Green light sword order!

This was the green light sword order of the general of the Vanguard.

Lai Junchen closed his eyes, his mouth moving, saying something. It was as if he was communicating with this sword order

Half a moment later, the green light sword order flashed, soaring into the skies. It disappeared back into the night air.

Lai Junchen glanced at the astonished Zhou Yinan next to him, smiling: “Your intuition is sometimes very accurate. The general has ordered, for Wen Wan to be released without any punishment.”

Zhou Yinan was dumbfounded.

“This Wen Wan, can be counted as fortunate. He is even able to make superior Liu Siufeng act to order us to release someone.” In the pupils of Lai Junchen’s eyes, a strange radiance was hidden. “It seems like superior Liu Siufeng, really cares about this Wen Wan.....”

Before he had finished.

“Ao——！！”

The strange screech of an eagle, sounded from outside the [Four dragon light prison].

Zhou Yinan's face greatly changed.

Even Lai Junchen's heart shuddered slightly.

They could only see a giant black eagle, sweeping down. Its wings were like divine electric blades. Meeting no resistance, it shot past the light screen of the [Four dragon light prison], rushing before the two. Finally transforming into a huddle of black light, it landed on Lai Junchen's hand, becoming a black eagle jade piece.

The black eagle jade piece of the Pass Lord Residence.

It was an item used to convey messages from the Pass Lord's residence. It possessed an even greater authority than the green light sword order.

Lai Junchen suppressed the shock in his heart. Activating his inner yuan, he retrieved the information held within.

Ten breaths later, the black jade eagle piece once again returned to becoming a huge eagle, soaring into the skies.

Lai Junchen did not dare tarry. Along with Zhou Yinan, he respectfully sent the black eagle jade piece off.

Within Youyan Pass, the black eagle jade piece represented ultimate authority. The information that was contained within, was not something they could disobey or query.

“Superior, just what has happened?” Zhou Yinan curiously asked. No matter what kind of military message was contained within the black eagle jade piece, this event signified something great occurring.

Lai Junchen was silent for along while. Deeply breathing in, he turned his head to look at Zhou Yinan. In a strange tone: “I really want to know now, just what kind of background that Wen Wan has. Not only does superior Liu Siufeng wants to save him, now even the Pass Lord residence has sent out a military order, for me to immediately release Wen Wan....it seems like we have kicked a bee’s nest.”

Zhou Yinan was dumbfounded.

He had never thought, that the arrival of the black eagle jade piece was for Wen Wan.

This was far too inexplicable.

Within Zhou Yinan’s memory, there had never been such a precedent. The black eagle from the Pass Lord residence, came for just a military officer?

He nearly could not restrain himself from asking, that just what was Wen Wan’s background, that he had such power?

Zhou Yinan could not help but remember the words that Wen Wan had once said a few days ago——

“And to tell you honestly, I am person with an extremely great background. Today you guys will capture me, but very quickly you will respectfully release and see me off.”

Could it be that the reason Wen Wan did not seem to fear at all, was because he had long foreseen such a day coming?

As he thought of this, Zhou Yinan’s heart became more and more curious.

The brash Wen Wan, could it really be that he had a great background?

As they spoke, , Lai Junchen had already ordered someone to pass on the order to end Kang Yu’s interrogation.

Kang Yu walked gloomily and unwillingly out from the black large tent. Seeing Lai Junchen, he bowed slightly. “Superior, why have so suddenly made me stop my interrogation. I have already used half of the great tortures, then you made me stop. Superior, please give me a little bit more of time. I can definitely find out matters of value, don’t listen to the nonsense of others....” Saying this, Kang Yu glared at Zhou Yinan. Very evidently, he assumed that Zhou Yinan had said something to Lai Junchen, that made Lai Junchen change his mind.

At this time, Kang Yu had already made his determination to

completely tear apart his relationship with Zhou Yinan.

Zhou Yinan laughed in his heart, not saying anything.

Lai Junchen did not even give Kang Yu a glance. He ordered Zhou Yinan to go release Wen Wan.

A short while later.

Zhou Yinan walked out from the large tent. From behind him, there was a face filled with dissatisfaction. The face belonged to Wen Wan. His chest was criss crossed with tens of blade injuries.

“Ai, are you releasing me now?” Wen Wan stuck his finger into his wounds, touching the blood. He brought his finger to his mouth, licking it. Then his mouth cracked open in a smile: “To confine your father I for three days and three nights, to not allow me to eat or drink, to even make that perverted person carve my chest with a little dagger? He says he wants to cut me up blade by blade while alive, but all of a sudden you want to release me?”

Zhou Yinan did not say anything.

In these days, he had already gotten used to the unstable and lunatic like disposition of Wen Wan.

Lai Junchen only bitterly smiled: “This matter, was just a misunderstanding. It has been hard on military officer Wen.”

“Misunderstanding?” Wen Wan chuckled, then spat. “You think that I am a stupid pig? Isn’t it those bastards against me controlling matters behind the scenes that want me to die? Your disciplinary squad stood on the side of the bastards and captured me. But then you discovered that my background is so hard that you guys don’t dare incite me. Are you terrified right now?”

Lai Junchen could not even utter a word.

The ruthless captain that was enough for every military officers and soldiers to go pale at the mention of his name, at this moment had no choice but to apologise.

If it was only the general of the Vanguard Liu Siufeng’s order, then Lai Junchen did not need to assume such a low stance. But the matter concerned the Pass Lord’s Residence. The black jade eagle piece represented far too many problems. It made Lai Junchen immediately realise, that the power contained on Wen Wan’s body, or perhaps the level of authority that Wen Wan could interact with, was absolutely not something the captain of the disciplinary squad could provoke.

To bow and submit. This was the technique that allowed Lai Junchen to stand for tens of years without falling.

And at this moment, for him to apologise could not be counted as anything.

But from Kang Yu’s perspective, this was nearly equivalent to the Heaven collapsing.

The Kang Yu adept at currying favour, seeing this scene, instantly realised, that the turn of events were far from encouraging. His head exploded with a noise, completely stupefied. He knew that he was completely finished because he had made far too wrong a choice.

“Fine, fine, I’m too lazy to talk nonsense with you.” Wen Wan’s temper quickly dispersed in front of the low and apologetic stance of Lai Junchen. Impatiently waving his hands, he said: “But this matter cannot be settled like so. Find the bastard who drew blades across my chest, and let me vent my rage, Then this matter can be counted as finished.”

Lai Junchen was very decisive. With a swipe of his hand, he pushed the Kang Yu that had a candle yellow complexion and dripping cold sweat in front of Wen Wan.

“Superior, save me, I” Kang Yu nearly bowed down and began grabbing at Lai Junchen’s leg.

But at this time, Lai Junchen instantly displayed his ruthless and merciless nature. For Kang Yu, a fellow that in his eyes could not even be counted as a tool, Lai Junchen would not have the slightest pity whatsoever. If Kang Yu really died, and this was able to settle Wen Wan’s rage, then he should just go die.

“Wahahahaha.....” Wen Wan looked at the shivering Kang Yu, and began laughing strangely.” I’ve long said, you will regret this. Who would have thought that our roles would be reversed so quickly, wahaha. People, tie him up! ”

Lai Junchen gave a signal.

Immediately, several soldiers of the disciplinary squad began binding him,

“Fifteen minutes ago I said to you, that if our roles are reversed, I will let you know just what is cruelty.” Wen Wan, like performing magic, took out a little dagger. His practiced hands drew across Kang Yan’s chest. In the blink of an eye, the wounds that Kang Yan left on Wen Wan’s chest, was replicated onto Kang Yan’s body.

Kang Yan began squealing for mercy, like a pig being slaughtered.

Who would be able to thought, that a soldier of the disciplinary squad, would be tortured within the [Four dragon light prison] formation of the disciplinary squad by an outsider.

Such a strange occurrence had no precedent, since the creation of disciplinary squad.

Wen Wan played around for a little while. Seeing Kang Yan’s face that seemed to indicate that he was about to die, he seriously considered: “Originally, I wanted to show mercy. But to leave such a person alive with dishonest intentions in the disciplinary squad, this will only create more miscarriages of justice. You have already done quite a few evils. Since it is like this, then lets have a negotiation. You should just go die. With you dead, no one will drag the Vanguard camp down anymore. At least then, everyone can fight in the war with no worries.”

Kang Yu widened his eyes, madly struggling. “No, I refuse, I....”

“Eh? Since it is like this, could the negotiations have broken down?” Wen Wan chuckled. “Since you don’t want to negotiate, then that’s fine too. No need for negotiation then, just go die.”

Before he had finished.

Wen Wan’s dagger, stabbed into Kang Yan’s chest.

Kang Yu widened his eyes, staring incredulously at Wen Wan. Even until the very moment he died, he did not believe that there would be such a person that would have dared to kill himself at the disciplinary camp.

“Fine, my mood is a little better.” “Wen Wan headed towards the outside.

Lai Junchen and the others let out a breath of relief.

Who knew that after Wen Wan walked a couple of steps away, he would suddenly turn back around. His eyes stared at Zhou Yinan.

Lai Junchen’s heart, instantly let out a thud. Could it be that Wen Wan wanted to take vengeance on the person who arrested him, Zhou Yinan? But he was different from Kang Yan. Zhou Yinan was a confidant that Lai Junchen regarded importantly. He was his successor that he had nourished heavily for many years. If this brash Wen Wan really acted without considering the consequences, and really wanted to kill Zhou

Yinan, then he himself, what should he do....

At this instant, countless thoughts flashed by in the mind of Lai Junchen.

Who would have guessed, what Wen Wan did after, was only to smile slightly. Looking at Zhou Yinan, he said: “You are not too bad. If there is a reason that the disciplinary squad still has a need to exist, it is because of the presence of people like you.”

As he finished, Wen Wan turned and left.

Lai Junchen was fiercely taken aback, then let out a breath of relief.。

Even with his experience and mental fortitude, his emotions was always led by this person, Wen Wan who was famous for his recklessness.

This fellow, was he really that reckless?

Lai Junchen for the first time felt, that he had overlooked this [Violent officer].

Zhou Yinan, lowered his head, as if he wanted to say something. But in the end, no words were spoken.

“.....

“Aiya, this hurts so much.....“

After leaving the formation [Four dragon light prison], he casually found a place to lean against. Wen Wan rubbed at his wounds with a grimace. It was so painful that he was about to jump up and down. “Mother fucker, what’s the use of bearing it so stoically. I should have asked Lai Junchen that old dog, to repay me with some medicine for wounds. I’ve really lost out, lost out.....”

Ye Qingyu that little thing, really didn’t come in search of me. That heartless fellow, it seems like I must go and find him instead.”

Wen Wan took care of the injuries on his chest slightly. Thankfully, they were only ordinary blade wounds. For an expert like him, they could not threaten his life. After resting for four or five days, they would nearly be completely healed.

He casually grabbed several soldiers passing by, ordering them to send a message back to his camp to tell the silver armoured soldiers that he was already fine. Then he quickly rushed to White Horse tower in the night.

There were some matters that he must explain to Ye Qingyu as quickly as possible.

Chapter 142 – Two Great Lists

“Aiyo. how did you get into such a state?”

At White Horse tower, Ye Qingyu jumped in shock at the sight of Wen Wan.

“Don’t say such useless words. You heartless person, do you have anything to eat? I’m about to starve to death, I haven’t eaten anything for several days already.” Wen Wan sat down with his legs wide apart, lifting the teapot on the table, gurgling as he drank the content entirely.

Ye Qingyu could not laugh or cry. He called for Mother Wu to enter and quickly prepare something for Wen Wan to eat.

Mother Wu was the female servant that Ye Qingyu had previously hired to take care of Bai Yuanxing. With the ability to cook tasty dishes, she was also diligent and hard working.

“Just where have you been these days? Didn’t you say you were going to come find me?” Ye Qingyu said grumpily. “I’ve waited you for several days, and I haven’t even seen your slightest shadow.”

Wen Wan said furiously.: “You damn heartless person. You still have the nerve to say such things. I was capture by the people of the disciplinary squad and was nearly played with until I died.....” He recounted everything that had occurred in these days, roughly telling the tale.

Ye Qingyu was rather tense when he heard the events at the beginning, but when it came to the moment where Wen Wan finally took care of Kang Yu, Ye Qingyu was completely speechless. Looking at this shameless person radiant with delight, Demon King Ye said: “You were able to kill people of the disciplinary squad and then swagger out from the [Four dragon light prison]? Didn’t you say you were nearly killed? How was it that you were the person who killed someone in the end....”

Wen Wan was at first pleased, then immediately became angered. “What? Could it be that you really want me to die? You damn heartless person!”

Ye Qingyu was temporarily speechless. “To speak with you, is just like coping with an annoying woman.”

Wen Wan had a gaze filled with murderous intent as he glared at Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu lifted his hands helplessly. “Fine, lets switch the subject. You’ve come at the right time, I have some matters I need to ask about. Zhao Ruyun, Yi Sance and also....” Ye Qingyu rattled off a list of names, then said: “These people, do you recognise them? Do they have great backgrounds?”

Wen Wan gave him a glance: “You’ve provoked these people?”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head. He retold the matters that had occurred in the supply department in detail from the beginning.

“Wahahaha, good, well done. No wonder you are someone that I have expectations for.” Wen Wan immediately began chuckling after hearing the story. Then he came over closer and said in a low tone: “To speak the truth, they’ve long been a thorn in my eyes. I’ve long wanted to take care of them. It’s a pity that my military position is equal to theirs and I don’t have more men than them, so I can’t easily make a move against them. Who would have thought that you had managed to take care of them like chopping vegetables. Wahaha, good, well done.”

After Ye Qingyu had finished hearing Wen Wan’s words, he carefully pondered over them. There were evidently some hidden meanings contained within the words of this shameless person.

“Wait, you mean, that even you can’t afford to provoke them?” Ye Qingyu looked at Wen Wan.

Wen Wan nodded his head seriously. “Of course. I’m not so stupid that I would irritate so many people all at once. The Cool Breeze mountain faction can be considered a core faction in Youyan pass with significant power. To dare provoke those people, you are really resenting the fact that your life is too long.....But to bring the conversation back on the topic, your ability to incite trouble is even greater than mine. Haha, you’ve only arrived for a few days at Youyan Pass and you’ve already caused such a great uproar to happen. Hahaha, little brother, you really are ferocious, wahaha!”

“You....” Ye Qingyu was completely speechless. “I’ve encountered a such problematic situation, why are you laughing with so much delight?”

“Wahahaha.....” Wen Wan began chuckling louder and louder, winking at Ye Qingyu. “Can you not tell, I am currently rejoicing in your misfortune.”

Ye Qingyu stood up with a dark face. Walking to the door, he said to the outside: “Mother Wu, no need to cook anymore. Rest early.”

Wen Wan stopped laughing, rubbing his stomach. “Fine, fine, let’s not joke around. Let’s speak of proper matters. First look at this....” Saying this, he retrieved two little booklets from his dimensional pouch. One was white and one was black, both around the thickness of one finger. From the outer appearance, both booklets seemed to be some sort of ancient text. The texts were already somewhat wrinkled and crumpled.

Ye Qingyu received it, looking at the name of the two booklets.

The white booklet, was called [Military star list].

The black booklet, was called [Great demon list].

“On the [Military star list], there are various experts of the human race in Youyan Pass ranked within. And on the [Great demon list], there are the ranks of the experts of the Snow Ground demon race....” Wen Wan stood up and stretched his bank. “The [Military star list] will only record experts of the thirty Spirit springs and above. There are a hundred ranks in total. As for the [Great demon list], it will only have the great demon leaders listed. The information written inside is very detailed. Read it well and remember. If you manage to encounter anyone listed, at least you will have some preparation and won’t walk in blind.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, browsing through the lists.

The [Military star list] had a hundred people in total. The one ranked number one was namely the Pass Lord Lu Zhaoge of Youyan Pass. He was an expert of the Bitter Sea stage. He had not fought in a battle for over twenty years, his strength deep and unfathomable. He was the indisputable number one expert of Youyan Pass. It was suspected that he had already reached the Heaven Ascension stage.

“Heaven Ascension stage? So the martial realm after the Bitter Sea stage, is called the Heaven Ascension stage?”

Ye Qingyu’s eyes brightened.

He continued to read on—

[Military star list]. Ranked number two, Gu Jinjun. Deputy leader of Youyan Pass, Bitter Sea expert. Well versed in using huge axes in battle. Thirteen years ago, he had fought, his axe splitting apart a mountain.....

[Military star list]. Ranked number three, Liu Siufeng. General of the Vanguard, Bitter Sea stage, well versed in using longsword. The last time he had fought was three years ago. One sword strike by him was enough to kill tens of demon leaders.....

[Military star list]. Ranked number four. Zuo Chanyi, general of the Left camp. Bitter Sea stage, well versed in in delicate invisible blades. The last time he had fought was six years ago. Entering deep within the territory of the snow ground demon race, he had killed twenty one

normal demon leaders before retreating unharmed.

[Military Star list] Ranked number five. Feng Muyou, general of the Right camp. Bitter Sea stage, well versed in the pike. His title was the [Stab Muyou]. With a powerful aura, once he struck, he would not retreat. The last time he had fought was two years ago.....

[Military star list]. Ranked number six.....

[Military star list]. Ranked number seven.....

Ye Qingyu flipped page after page. One after another, unfamiliar names appeared in front of him.

He knew, that the people list here were true the experts with outstanding military contributions in Youyan Pass. Every name that was able to enter this list, had experienced countless battles tottering between life and death. They were experts that had walked out from white bone mountains and fresh blood pools. This was especially so for the people at the top of this list. They were the leaders of the military. Existences like the Pass Lord and the four generals ranked at the very top.

But, it was namely that because of these characters could not been seen in normal times, that the list were not too detailed. The creator of the [Military star list] was perhaps not too clear on the true strength of these people and and their attributes. This was especially so for the experts ranked in the top ten. Some of the information written on the booklets were just guesses.....

After the top ten, the information became more completely and more detailed.

“En? Zhang San? This name, is really special.....”

Ye Qingyu’s gaze, landed on a name. He was slightly taken aback.

[Military star list]. Ranked thirteenth. The head of the military supply department of Youyan Pass. His nature is one where that he would definitely avenge all those that crossed him. Extremely protective. Well versed in slender swords, expert in assassination, and chasing, Profound techniques in remaining hidden. The last time he had acted was three months ago, where he killed sixty two people.....

Because of the incident at the supply department, Ye Qingyu could not help pay attention to this person called Zhang San who was the head of the supply department.

Seeing the evaluation of the words ‘definitely avenge all those that crossed him, extremely protective’, Ye Qingyu’s heart thudded.

If it was like this, then this Zhang San, most likely would regard himself as an enemy.

Ye Qingyu continued to read on.

He firmly imprinted every single name into his heart.

As he read to the end, Ye Qingyu suddenly shouted loudly: “What? This doesn’t make sense. After such a long time, you gave me something fake to try and fool me. Haha, I’ve was really nearly taken in by you.....”

“Fake? How is this possible?” Wen Wan was taken aback. “Just what did you see?”

“I’ve seen the two words ‘Wen Wan’. How is it possible for your name to appear on the military star list?” Ye Qingyu had a face filled with mockery. “Confess, isn’t this something that was made up by your? The last name, you must have added on by yourself?”

“Haha, who would have thought that you would be so young yet so jealous. What about it? I am ranked number a hundred on the [Military star list], what about it? Wen Wan laughed madly.

Ever since handing the booklets to Ye Qingyu, Wen Wan had waited to see this scene.

Ye Qingyu ignored him.

After departing from White deer academy, Wen Wan’s original nature could be said to have been exposed. He was becoming more and more like a little child, excessive and vain. The fact that he was able to be ranked on the [Military star list] made Ye Qingyu suspicious whether the person who had written this list be Wen Wan himself.

He opened the [Great Demon list].

The Snow Ground demon race had always been the life and death enemy of the human race of Snow country.

Of the lifeforms in Heaven Wasteland domain, the human race and the demon race were by far the greatest majority. The human race of Snow country and the Snow Ground demon race were the two strongest branches of these two great races. Approximately, they possessed together over eighty percent of Heaven Wasteland domain. It was rumoured that at the very moment Snow country was founded, the empire of the Snow ground demon court was also established. From that day on, between the two great races, for the struggle of resources and territory there were already tens of large scales campaigns involving the entire country that had occurred. And as for small battles, there were so many that happened that it could not be counted.

Considering all the factors, the human race could be said to be occupying the upper hand.

On the [Great demon list] the one ranked at number one was Burning Snow. He was a great demon commander. An expert of the Snow bird race, he had commanded the [Southern incline legion] for tens of years and was titled the invincible warrior. He caused Lu Zhaoge to stay dead within Youyan pass with no way to take action. He was a great titled character within the Snow Ground demon court. and was known as the Burning Snow demon general. Along with Lu Zhaoge, he was part of the [Ten War Gods] in Heaven Wasteland domain. But this demon race authority, had not taken action for a very long time. As of right now, it was very hard to estimate the true strength of this demon.....

[Great demon list]. Ranked number two, the Mad Wind demon general. An expert of the Wind race at Snow Ground Demon court, he was a power that had only emerged in the past twenty years. His methods were

tyrannical and the way he did things was quick like a violent gust. It was said that the Mad Wind demon general had once fought one on one with the number two expert of Youyan Pass. They had fought for over ten days and ten nights without victor able to be determined.....

[Great Demon list]. Ranked number three. Swimming Dragon demon general.....

[Great demon list]. Ranked number four. Burrowing Ground demon general.....

[Great demon list]. Ranked number four. Bloodthirsty demon general.....

Ye Qingyu read one name after another, his heart frightened by the information contained within.

Youyan Pass was known as the strongest frontier in the entire Snow County. In the Pass, famous warriors were like clouds, with countless experts present. It was absolutely the Pass with the strongest military power in all of Heaven Wasteland domain. But the [Southern incline legion] did not fall behind to Youyan Pass in the slightest. Similarly, their warriors were also like the clouds, also possessing countless experts. At the very least, through just a comparison between the [Military star list] and the [Great demon list]. the [Southern Incline legion] did not fall behind in the slightest.

“Look at the bottom, look at the bottom. It’s useless to look at the names at the front.” Wen Wan leant against the table. He was like a cyclone sweeping through the clouds as he devoured the dishes that

Mother Wu had prepared. A green vegetable hung from his mouth as he mumbled indistinctly: “You have no chance of meeting the old monsters of the demon race. If your luck is really so good as to meet them, then you should just honestly reincarnate and become a new person. You should look at information about the little demons, such as the the younger generation of the demon race, the seven people known as the [Seven stars of the skies].....”

Chapter 143 – A place with many visitors

“The seven stars of the skies?” Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

Wen Wan’s manner of eating food could be compared to Big Head’s. While devouring the dishes ravenously, he said: “En, of the [Southern Incline legion] in the Snow Ground Demon race, there are seven prodigies from the younger generation. They are known as the seven geniuses of the demon race rarely seen even in a hundred years. They are named after the big dipper. Respectively, they are called Alpha, Beta, Gamma, Delta, Epsilon, Zeta and Eta. Everyone of them are fierce characters and they have killed significant numbers the human race experts.....”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, indicating that he understood.

He continued to look downwards at the list. As expected, he saw the introduction of the [Seven stars of the skies.

These seven great Demons, in the [Great demon list], were ranked at fifty fifth, fifty nine, sixty one, sixty eight, seventy three, seventy seven and eighty five positions.

Alpha Star. [Great Demon List]. Ranked Seventy three. Six star demon warrior.....

Beta Star. [Great Demon List]. Ranked sixty eight. Seven Star demon warrior.....

Gamma Star. [Great Demon List]. Ranked eighty fifth. Five star demon warrior.....

Delta Star. [Great demon list]. Ranked sixty one, seven star demon warrior.....

Eta Star. [Great Demon List]. Ranked fifty fifth, eight star demon warrior.....

Epsilon star [Great Demon List]. ranked seventy seven, six star demon warrior.....

Zeta star. [Great Demon list]. Ranked fifth nine, eight star demon warrior.....

The introduction of every person in the seven stars of the skies were extremely extensive. Not only did it detail what kind of demon race each belonged to, it also introduced their power, battle records, battle methods and weaknesses. Ye Qingyu's could not help but pound as he read through the battle history of these seven experts of the demon race. These seven great powers of the demon race could still be considered as relatively young, as their ages were not yet over a hundred. If this was converted to a comparable age with the human race, then they should be around twenty to thirty years of age. At such an age, with such a strength, they were definitely deserving to be called geniuses.

Ye Qingyu continued to traverse the information about these entities.

He asked himself in his heart, if he faced any one of the [Seven stars of the skies], was it possible for him to win?

According to Wen Wan's previous words, if the rankings of the [Military star list] and the [Great demon list] were the same, then their strength would also be no different. The lowest expert of the [Military star list] was recorded to possess a strength above thirty Spirit springs. Using this as a foundation of comparison, the strength of the [Seven stars of the skies] could be determined. The Gamma Star that was the lowest positioned among them, ranked eighty fifth, should be around the forty spirit springs of the human race.....

Ye Qingyu himself was as of right now at the fifteen Spirit springs realm. After activation of the [Limitless divine way], his strength would multiply. The opponents he could face, were experts that are within the thirty Spirit springs boundary.

In other words, Ye Qingyu would not be able to beat Gamma.

And furthermore, Gamma was just the strategist amongst the [Seven stars of the skies]. One was able to discern the terrifying strength of the other seven stars through this point alone.

If he wanted to defeat these great demons, Ye Qingyu needed to be able to activate the [Second limit] of the [Limitless divine way], multiplying his strength by a factor of three. Unless he did so, it was impossible.

“Haha, how is it? Are you scared?” Wen Wan had taken his fill of alcohol and food. He said laughingly: “The reason I gave this to you, was to make you realise, just how many experts, masters, geniuses,

authorities are gathered in Youyan Pass. It will make you realise what it means – there is a person beyond a person and a sky beyond a sky. You must know you are not the only genius in this world. Your strength did increase rapidly, but you must not be conceited. Youyan Pass is a battlefield, and life and death is decided in a breath's time on the battlefield. This is different from White Deer academy. You must use the shortest amount of time possible to adapt and adjust. After bringing you all the way to Youyan Pass, I do not want you to perish in just a few days.”

These words, was very agreeable at the start. Wen Wan's careful teachings, made Ye Qingyu slightly moved.

But as he heard the later parts, Ye Qingyu's face turned dark.

Whatever well intentioned words, by coming out of the crude mouth of Wen Wan, would take on a completely different meaning.

“You managed to easily take care of Yi Sance and Zhao Ruyun others. This is already a fairly good record. But your self confidence must not surge. You must know, that of these people, the greatest among them is Yi Sance. But even he could not enter the [Military star list]. To win against them, is not something to be proud of.” Wen Wan spoke again. “And furthermore, you could be said to have handled matters poorly. You must remember not to provoke others, and not to always have your thoughts written on your face. If you can really endure it no longer and must act, then you must kill them in one blow. If you really leave such disasters alive, then who knows whether there will their be hidden arrows and spears attacking you from behind you on the battlefield? These nobles has a high opinion of themselves. They are crafty and cunning. They are willing to do anything. If I was you, that person called Zhao Ruyun, would long have died.”

Ye Qingyu smiled slightly, seriously nodding his head.

He agreed with Wen Wan's points.

"That's right." Ye Qingyu finally remembered something. "Help me find two people. One should be a doctor following the army, he's called Li Shizen. The other, is a young man, called Ye Congyun."

Wen Wan nodded his head, without saying anything.

The two conversed until the middle of the night.

Wen Wan still spoke in a long-winded fashion, explaining the situation within Youyan pass very clearly.

The human race was established in the mountain pass. They sat in Youyan Pass, which is like a Heaven's moat. And as for the [Southern incline legion], they were stationed at the Violent Snow glacier a hundred miles away. The hundred mile distance between Youyan Pass and the Violent Snow glacier was like a gigantic meat grinder. Even if the two parties were currently peaceful for the moment, the area between them would have large numbers of small scale battles. Every moment and second, there would be soldiers dying from both side.

According to Wen Wan's information, every ten days, Youyan Pass would hold a small scale battle.

On one hand, it was to train the soldiers and preserve their will to do battle. The other reason this served was to deplete the military power of the demon race and probe at their battle power.

And every time they departed, a patrolling sword envoy would provide assistance.

According to the rotation, Ye Qingyu should within a month's time, accept the order of the Pass Lord's residence and participate in a small scale battle.

"I don't know whether I will also participate in the battle at that time. But no matter what, you must be careful. In the battlefield, swords and spears have no eyes. One mistake, and you may regret it for the rest of your life." Wen Wan constantly nagged. Within his words, he began to display regret over the fact that he brought Ye Qingyu into the front lines. But the current developments, were already not something he was able to control.

Ye Qingyu was excited in his heart. He was very interested in the upcoming battle.

Instead of fighting with people of the same race here, why not charge into the battlefield and kill the demon race.

"Also, this time, you have caused great chaos in the supply department. Very quickly, every party and faction will know of your name. I believe in a short amount of time, your fame will quickly surge. Therefore in this period of time, you had best in a low key fashion and don't go inciting more trouble. You are still a soldier in the end, if you constantly cause

trouble, the various commanders will regard you as a thorn and begin develop poor opinions.” Wen Wan reminded Ye Qingyu yet again.”

Ye Qingyu at this time, did not banter with Wen Wan anymore. He closely remembered the points he said.

Because of the lateness of the evening, the streets were already extremely tightly guarded with high security patrolling around. Therefore, that night, Wen Wan stayed at White Horse tower.

Only until the early dawn of the second day, did he leave, returning to the Vanguard camp.

“The two people you are searching for, if I have news, I will definitely contact you.”

Wen Wan said before leaving.

.....

.....

In the next several days, Ye Qingyu’s name, began spreading throughout in Youyan pass at a crazy rate just as they had expected.

Zhao Ruyun had really been hung on the [Punishment pillars] for a full six hours. Only then was he released.

Lin Lang, Yi Sance and the others did not dare breath a word to anyone regarding the matters that had occurred in the Stone Hall.

But this matter, began transmitting throughout Youyan pass. It was unknown as to just what channels this information was passed along.

Yi Sance and the others were both angry and embarrassed. They announced that they would isolate themselves for the time being, but this was not enough to halt the transmittance of information throughout Youyan pass.

There were all sorts and types of rumours, but basically it all said – there was a new person called Ye Qingyu that was appointed the patrolling sword envoy. Not long after he arrived, he completely defeated all the experts of the Cool breeze mountain faction. And the Zhao Ruyun that was normally so arrogant was hung on the [Punishment pillars] at the supply department....

Such news, began spreading out like wind.

“This Ye Qingyu, just who is he?”

“Haha, to think that the new master of White Horse tower would be so violent?

“Such a pity. If I was there, seeing the humiliated face of Zhao Ruyun is enough for me to feel pleasure for a year’s time.”

“This new patrolling sword envoy, just what is his background, that he

would be so forceful?”

“Ye Qingyu? I’ve never heard of this name before.....”

“It seems like within Youyan pass, there is going to be another strong character that will emerge.”

“Speaking of the subject again, the Zhang San of the supply department is so protective, could it really be that he will not interfere into this situation?”

AT this time, nearly everyone was discussing Ye Qingyu’s name.

It was exactly as described by Wen Wan. Ye Qingyu’s name, with the speed of a hurricane, swept outwards in all directions. The previous day he was a new and nameless person, and today he was a person that was able to attract the attention of countless forces in the pass.

Many careful people, had already begun stealthily investigating into Ye Qingyu’s background.

There were also people that prepared to take action. They brought presents to greet Ye Qingyu at White Horse tower.

The birth of such a forceful new character, made many people see opportunity.

Of course, there were far more people that only continued to observe.

The people Ye Qingyu had offended, their backgrounds were also great. To make such a choice of whom to support at this time, the costs outweighed the benefits.

At this time, the originally completely desolate White Horse tower, unexpectedly became as bustling and busy as a market.

Ye Qingyu had no interest in the people bringing gifts standing at his doorstep. Closing the doors, he chose not to receive them. He hid within the quite fourth floor of White door tower, training in the silent room. The only White Horse sword slave was already in a weak state, so he only focused on recovering. Seeing such a bustling scene made him very excited, but he had no way of receiving the guests.

The duty to block the entry of the visitors, fell upon Mother Wu's shoulders.

Chapter 144 – News regarding Li Shizen

The middle aged housewife that Ye Qingyu had randomly hired from the marketplace had a strong sense of responsibility for a servant. She displayed a toughness that made even Ye Qingyu speechless.

At the very beginning when she was manning the doors, she was very patient in explaining matters to the visitors. But as she discovered that this crowd of people would just pester endlessly, she became somewhat impatient. Regardless of what she said, these words would not enter into their ears at all. She began swiping the broom in her hands about, wildly swinging it through the air. She shouted angrily: “Go, go, go go! My superior is busy, he doesn’t have time to receive you. Quickly go, I still have to make dinner. If you delay my master’s dinner, your heads.....”

This housewife only had one thought in her mind——

Since her master did not wish to receive such people, then these people were not existences that needed to be feared.

Therefore, if she wanted to aid Ye Qingyu in solving his problems and share his burdens, she must display a forceful nature.

Mother Wu was very satisfied with her current job. Not only was the work light, the benefits were extremely great.

This female servant hoped that if her performance was suitable, Ye Qingyu would change her status as a temporary servant to become a permanent servant. Then her family did not have to worry constantly and

remain poor.

These were the simple thoughts of a minor person.

It seemed not too correct, but was in reality very correct.

If she knew that any one of the people covering their heads and fleeing away right now, was enough to make her and her entire family die tens of times over, she would be so frightened that her knees would soften.

“Ai, shrew, shrew.....”

The little military officers were helpless as they were chased away.

A common housewife that they could casually crush to death just by waving their hands could not do anything just because the White Horse tower was standing behind her. This was enough to deflate them entirely. Fate was sometimes so laughable, but what could they do?

After several days of hustle and bustle, the dust gradually began to settle.

The people appearing in front of White Horse tower gradually lessened.

But the the fame of the tough housewife Mother Wu, began to spread out.

As the person in question, Mother Wu knew nothing about this fact and how she was already somewhat famous in the Pass.

On the fourth day, Wen Wan sent over someone with news. He had found some clues about the location of the old military doctor Li Shizen. As for the little soldier called Ye Congyun, there were still not any news whatsoever. After all, the number of soldiers in Youyan pass was far too many. Wen Wan was only a military officer; the channels and resources he could utilise were limited. He could only search slowly, and could not be rushed.

Ye Congyun was the little brother of the armoured sentry.

That day when Ye Qingyu was fleeing for his life at the underground ice cave, his path was blocked by the [Pill King of Azure Phoenix] Chen Moyun. The armoured soldier died in battle as a result to protect Ye Qingyu. Before he passed away, he told Ye Qingyu he had a little brother called Ye Congyun. He asked that if Ye Qingyu managed to make it to Youyan Pass, that he hoped Ye Qingyu was able to pass on the news that he had died to his little brother.....

Ye Qingyu did not forget this task entrusted to him.

There was not a day, that he dared forget the benevolence of the sentries.

And it was those days, when the sentries used their own flesh and blood to protect him, these actions was what allowed Ye Qingyu to comprehend the meaning behind the word 'soldier'.

The matters that had happened on those days, from Ye Qingyu's point of view had an impact and baptism akin to a tsunami or an avalanche on his system of values.

After arriving to Youyan Pass, at the first instant Ye Qingyu went in search for the little brother of the armoured soldier. It was a pity that in such a large Youyan pass, searching for someone like a fly with no head was ultimately not a method that would work. Ye Qingyu could only ask for assistance and borrow the power of others, so that he could find this Ye Congyun.

No matter what, he could not allow anything to happen to Ye Congyun.

Ye Qingyu swore in his heart.

Hearing that Wen Wan had not managed to discover any news about Ye Congyun whereabouts made Ye Qingyu extremely disappointed.

But he knew that he could not blame Wen Wan for such a result.

Thankfully the news of Li Shizen whereabouts could be counted as a great harvest.

The situation of the elderly man was comparatively better.

According to Wen Wan's information, Li Shizen was right now serving in the Vanguard camp, therefore it was very easy to find him.

The current circumstances of Li Shizen was also included in the information passed along--

Because of the fact that the elder's medical arts were profound and he had coincidentally met with a guerilla warfare officer who had heavy injuries and was just returning from the front lines, he gained fame. He managed to save this warfare officer from the hands of the Death God. In the short time of tens of days, he had already treated a significant number of elite soldiers, healing their injuries. As such, he received heavy respect. To prevent the elderly from rushing about everywhere to treat injuries, the Vanguard camp specially opened a medical building for Li Shizen to sit and treat the various wounds. He did not need to follow the armies to battle.

After numerous items where his miracle hands brought people back from the dead, this elder received the title of [Miracle hands divine doctor]. He could be said to have some small fame in the Vanguard.

After receiving such information, Ye Qingyu could rest at ease, without the need to immediately rush to see him.

A doctor was a rare resource within the army and a doctor with such a high level of medical skill like Li Shizen, would receive even greater respect from the military.

This was because soldiers danced on the the edge of a blade where the head of the blade was lapping in blood. No one could not guarantee they would not get injured at any moment. Everyone understood, a doctor with high skill, perhaps at that key moment, would save their life.

Therefore, Li Shizen should not encounter any danger.

And right now, Ye Qingyu himself was plagued with disturbances. He did not know what kind of action Zhao Ruyun, Yi Sance and the others would take in vengeance. To prevent the anger of those people to be released on Li Shizen, Ye Qignyu decided for the moment not to let others know of the relationship between himself and Li Shizen. After all, they were in the military together – if Li Shizen really encountered any issues, he could still make it in time to aid him.

Another three days passed.

The imagined revenge from Zhao Ruyun did not arrive.

Ye Qingyu spent his days training, without doing much else.

The position of the patrolling sword envoy was special, without the need to attend for duties and patrols everyday. No one came to manage him.

But Ye Qingyu felt, that he himself had not immersed himself into the life at Youyan Pass. There was a considerable difference from his imagined life as a soldier.

Bai Yuanxing's injuries had completely recovered.

The cold poison in his body was completely expelled. He could already resume his normal functions. Apart from the fact that his body was still slightly weak, there were no major issues remaining.

Mother's Wu mission was hence completely finished. According to the initial terms of her hire, her contract should have ended, but she wanted to stay behind. She finally mustered the courage to say this to Ye Qingyu. Ye Qingyu pondered over this with a smile. These days with the aid of Mother Wu where she kept herself busy in White Horse tower really made his life much more easy and relaxed. Furthermore, Bai Yuanxing could not handle the matters when it came to cooking. Therefore he agreed to retain the famous shrew of White Horse.

Right now, what made Ye Qingyu slightly worried was Big Head.

Ever since the glutton came to Youyan Pass, it was unknown whether it was because the temperature was too cold for him, or perhaps that he had gorged himself from eating too much, he had always remained in a state of slumber. No matter how much Ye Qingyu called to him, he would not wake. Previously he was amazing at eating, now he became amazing at sleeping. For seven or eight days, he had not woke up even once. It would occasionally sleepily move a little bit, just to open his mouth slightly to eat something.....

“Ai, if not for the fact I brought you out from the [Boundary canyon battlefield], and hoped that you can become a Spirit beast companion, you would be in trouble. Otherwise, with your foolish appearance and performance, I would have long thrown you away.....”

Ye Qingyu looked towards the slumbering Big Head, weeping dry tears.

Until right now, he had still not made clear, just what kind of breed this glutton was, and what abilities he possessed.

Time, passed day by day through such boring training.

Ye Qingyu's handling and control of his yuan qi had finally reached a state of completion. He was completely able to control the power of the fifteen Spirit springs stage.

At the same time, his understanding of the [Limitless divine way] had deepened. Out of very three times of trying to enter the [First limit], he could already succeed one time. This kind of success rate was already comparatively high. It was only that his attempts to enter the 'second limit' was still far from successful. Ye Qingyu tried for hundreds of times, and only at the last time, could he begin to touch the door of the [Second limit domain]. But ultimately, he was not able to step past this boundary.

And as for the four moves of the golden armoured king and the four moves of the unmatched general, these two set of divine techniques, Ye Qingyu had constantly practised them. His comprehension and understanding of these techniques became even deeper where he gained a more familiar understanding. These eight moves, demonstrated from his hands, was many times more times powerful than it was previously.

Ye Qingyu's only regret was that, since the Inexorable spear was destroyed within the [Cloud top cauldron], he felt that he was lacking in a heavy weapon.

Apart from training, Ye Qingyu would also browse through the [Pill mantra].

After everything in the [pill mantra] was deeply imprinted his mind,

confirming that he would not forget any of the contents and he could nearly read the book backwards, Ye Qingyu chose to destroy this booklet. After all, it was an object belonging to the [Pill king of Azure Phoenix] Chen Moyun. The fact that he had killed Chen Moyun could not be leaked out as of this moment. Therefore leaving the [Pill mantra] on him was a disaster waiting to happen.

For him to completely digest the contents of the [Pill mantra] would require the time frame of at least several years. Ye Qingyu was a genius, but even geniuses needed time to grow. Right now, he could only walk step by step forwards slowly.

If there was time, Ye Qingyu really wanted to try and refine pills.

If he was able to refine the [Mysterious heaven pellet] according to Li Shizen's pill formula, he would definitely benefit greatly.

However, Ye Qingyu understood that some matters could not be rushed and could only progress slowly.

As for the [Cloud top cauldron], it definitely could not be exhibited to the wider world.

Ye Qingyu only treated it as a storage tool for his use.

As for the jade box that Ye Qingyu had discovered on the body of Liu Yuancheng and had always been curious about, he still did not know what was inside. After several times where he attempted to understand and unlock it, he still could not manage to break apart the seal of the

jade container. He planned to find a master in small scale formations to open the box after some time had passed and the winds had blown over.

Without knowing why, Ye Qingyu felt that this jade contained something that would prove to be of importance to him.

The days of cultivation passed especially quickly.

Ye Qingyu's strength, after the previous explosive surge, began entering into a slow and settled stage.

According to the different martial manuals, after a martial artist had reached the twenty Spirit springs stage, they could attempt to enter the Bitter Sea stage.

But the large majority of martial artists, would not make this choice.

Because twenty Spirit springs were the lowest requirement for the Bitter Sea stage. If they really entered the Bitter Sea stage with such a number, it would signify that the yuan qi liquid in their dantian world was not enough, and would always lack for something. Even if they became a Bitter Sea stage, the area of this 'sea' was limited. There were times that their strength could not even be compared to experts of the sixty and seventy Spirit springs stage.

Chapter 145 – Everything was slightly strange

The earlier one entered into the Bitter Sea stage, the lower their future potential and limits for cultivation was.

Because the Spirit spring stage was a realm where one accumulated yuan qi. The longer one stayed in this stage of accumulation, the greater the quantity of yuan qi in your body. And by leaving this stage early, this signified that you had accumulated little too. This would lead to a weak foundation, making your future path narrower.

Ye Qingyu's plan was to cultivate as many Spirit springs as possible before considering entering the Bitter Sea stage.

According to his previous cultivation speed, this needed at least ten years of time.

Therefore he was not in a rush.

Practicing the martial path was originally something that went against the heavens. It had never been a matter anyone could rush through.

It was another matter altogether that Ye Qingyu regarded very importantly ——

After reaching the twenty Spirit springs stage, a martial artist could attempt to excavate or bestow an attribute to their inner yuan.

There were martial artists that drew flame into their body, controlling fire yuan qi. They were able to completely scorch the lands around them through this power. There were also martial artists that managed to grasp wind yuan qi. With just one thought, they were able to engulf heaven and earth with gale.....

According to the formation yuan qi theory and foundation, there were normally five elements that existed in heaven and earth. Metal, wood, water, fire and earth could be developed within someone's inner yuan and display a frightening power. Apart from this, there were also other attributes like poison, ice and shadow. These various rare attributes could also be controlled by some fortunate people and become some rarely seen inner yuan attributes.

This process where one imparted an attribute to their own inner yuan, was called [Spirit raise] in the martial cultivation process.

Ye Qingyu as of this moment was already at the fifteen Spirit springs stage. If he managed to excavate another five Spirit springs, then it was possible for him to [Spirit raise].

Only Spirit spring experts who had successfully undergone the Spirit raise process, could be counted as true experts of the Spirit spring stage.

If your inner yuan had an attribute, then your power in battle would multiply.

Those martial artists that had successfully underwent the [Spirit raise process] could completely crush martial artists who had not undergone this process and was at the same stage.

For people cultivating in the yuan qi martial path, the [Spirit raise] could be counted as a threshold.

A threshold that was extremely important.

There were some martial artists that began to Spirit raise at twenty Spirit springs, and they were not even able to succeed at the forty Spirit springs stage. There were also some geniuses that went against heavens who was able to complete this process quickly. The instant these geniuses entered into the twenty Spirit spring stage, they would succeed in Spirit raising and were able control inner yuan with a special attribute that belonged to them.

And as for what kind of attribute was chosen, this needed the individual choice of the martial artist to decide based on the state of their own body.

Normally, there were not many special requirements.

But the large majority of martial artist in this world chose attributes of the five great elements: metal, earth, water, fire and wood.

Because these five elements were the fundamental energy that this world was constructed from, it extended everywhere in this world. These elements were relatively easy to sense and to control. Furthermore, every element of the five elements had extraordinary power, and belonged to the major path. As for the other rare attributes like shadow, poison and space, these attributes were very hard to grasp. Therefore the process of Spirit raising would need far more effort compared to the major

elements. It was very possible that all one's effort would go to waste if they chose rare attributes.

Ye Qingyu had already began to consider, just what attribute he should choose.

This was a very important matter.

Therefore he had to consider seriously. He could not make any hasty decision.

.....

The fifteenth day.

Ye Qingyu was summoned to the Pass Lord's residence to receive orders.

The order contained two points.

The first was that Ye Qingyu could once again choose ten elite soldiers from the army for the White Horse tower. They would become the new White Horse sword slaves.

The second was to notify Ye Qingyu that fifteen days later, the Vanguard camp would begin a small scale military operation. Ye Qingyu must follow the army to the Explosive Snow glacier, and participate in a battle against the Snow ground demon race. The Pass Lord residence

notified Ye Qingyu in advance so he could make preparations to follow the army.

“Such a day, has finally arrived?”

Ye Qingyu was slightly excited.

Every since receiving the [White Horse battle armour] he had never had the opportunity to utilise it in real battle.

Through several days of continuous training, Ye Qingyu vaguely felt that by confining himself, his development would be slow. He needed a great deal of battle experience. Only through this could he have sort of a breakthrough.

Afternoon of that day.

According to the summons, Ye Qingyu went to the [Military council pavilion] to receive his orders.

This time, he still was not able to see the legendary War God of Youyan Pass, Lu Zhaoge. The person who received him was still Mister Liu.

Compared to the last time, Mister Liu spoke a little more.

This scholar with a lean face, enquired amiably about various little things regarding Ye Qingyu. Such as whether he had gotten used to Youyan Pass, or whether he had any requests. He was different from the

solemn and dignified strategist of the Pass Lord's residence, and was more like a kind and amiable old man. It was only that the little student standing beside him stared at Ye Qingyu incessantly, evaluating him from top to bottom. In his bright and clear eyes, there was curiosity and an undisguised interest. He evaluated Ye Qingyu with a smiling expression, as if he wanted to completely see through Ye Qingyu.

Mister Liu's attitude, made Ye Qingyu feel that something was strange.

But he answered every question that was asked.

"In the [Gale operation] fifteen days later, I will also be there to accompany the army when we depart. Haha, I am far too old, my body is already becoming somewhat stiff. At that time, I will need to ask sword envoy Ye for his care and attention." Mister Liu said with a laugh. After all the procedures had been met, Mister Liu placed all the arrangements for this battle into a jade piece and handed it to Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu received the jade piece, and said seriously. "Protecting Mister Liu, is the responsibility of every soldier."

In his heart, he felt there was something strange going on.

According to common reason, a strategist like Mister Liu of the Pass Lord's residence would normally not follow the armies along to battle. Such scholars, would normally sit safely at the centre of command, creating plans and schemes, analysing the situation, providing opinion. They would rarely be like warfare officers that charged forward into battle. The [Gale operation], just what was it about, that it would need a strategist like Mister Liu to accompany them into battle?

“En, you have so many accomplishments when you are so young. No wonder you are the inheritor of a heroic badge.” Mister Liu still had a face of friendliness. He reminded: “This time, the [Gale operation] is not a little matter. What is contained within the jade piece, is the plan of action concerning this operation. After you take it, don’t look at it immediately. Only after ten days, can you open the jade piece. At that time, you will know the contents of this operation.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head to indicate that he understood.

“Fine, prepare well in these days. If you have any needs, you can come find me at any time.” Mister Liu slapped Ye Qingyu’s shoulder with a smile, then said to the little boy standing beside him. “Xinger, help me see Sword envoy Ye off.”

Xinger smiled, bouncing and jumping to the door. Bowing, his eyes like moon crescents, he said: “Military officer Ye, please.”

The little student jumped and hopped at the front as he led the way.

Ye Qingyu followed behind, the [Military council pavilion]

On the way, there were many people that greeted the little student Xinger with a smile. It seemed like this fellow was well known within the Pass Lord’s residence.

Some people, after saying their greetings, evaluated Ye Qingyu with a curious gaze.

Very quickly, someone recognised that this youth with a strong and muscular body and graceful facial feature, was namely the new patrolling sword envoy of White Horse tower whose name had spread throughout in these days. This caused a significant commotion.

Once the news spread out, there were people that specially came from the Pass Lord's residence. Pretending to be just passing by, when they brushed past Ye Qingyu, they would turn and evaluate Ye Qingyu from top to bottom. They then hid far away, whispering secretly and pointing Ye Qingyu. They had never imagined, that the ferocious demon king Ye from the rumours, would be a gentlemanly, elegant faced young man. It made them exhale in shock.

Ye Qingyu also did not imagine, that the first impression he left to the people of the Pass Lord's residence would be like this.

"Just how were you able to do it?" As they were about to leave the gates of the Pass Lord's residence, the little student Xinger asked curiously.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback: "What are you referring to?"

"How were you able to, in such a short amount of time of a month, from three Spirit springs to rise to the fifteen Spirit springs?" The little boy stuck his tongue out.

"Oh, you're asking about that....." Ye Qingyu's mind flickered with countless scenes. The voices and smiling expression of the sentries appeared again. He smiled: "That is a secret."

Xinger pressed his lips together. “You’re really petty.”

Saying that, he pointed toward the gates. “We’ve already arrived. Get out by yourself.”

This really was a proud and pampered little student.

Ye Qingyu laughed involuntarily, exiting from the gates.

Xinger stood on the background, looking at the back of Ye Qingyu. The smile on his face, gradually disappeared.

“I can’t discern anything. Perhaps Mister Liu’s guess was wrong. But right now this is a crucial time, we can’t afford not to take any precautions.” Xinger’s appearance changed from his childlike countenance that he previously displayed, becoming like an old expert. He recalled the transformation of Ye Qingyu’s expression as he had asked this question. He had not even missed a shred of change that occurred on Ye Qingyu’s expression. But Xinger still could not reach any conclusion whatsoever, shaking his head. With both his hands clasped behind his back, he returned inside.

.....

Returning to White Horse tower.

Ye Qingyu stored away the military order jade piece safely.

He felt that something was really strange.

It was not only the fact that Mister' Liu's attitude was somewhat bizarre. Even the words of the little student Xinger, seemed innocent on the surface, but in reality was probing for something.

A master and student pair made Ye Qingyu feel that something was wrong.

And furthermore, the [Gale operation] was a military operation that would happen fifteen days later. The army's plan must be confidential and secret, with great importance attached to the secrecy. It was entirely possible for them to pass down the jade piece military order just before departing. This would prevent news of this operation from leaking. But why was it that Mister Liu gave this jade piece so early to himself, and reminded him that he must not open it before the appointed time?

Why did Ye Qingyu feel, that Mister LIu's was rather hinting to him, that he must look at the contents of the jade piece?

As for the military supply department where he had caused a great commotion, the Pass Lord residence did not take any stance on this whatsoever. There was not even a word of reprimand that was passed down. This was also enough to make Ye Qingyu feel that something weird was going on.

Everything was abnormal.

“I don’t know what Mister Liu is planning. But this doesn’t matter, I have a clear conscience. I can only take things step by step. Before departing, I must be careful and prevent the people of the Cool breeze mountain faction from secretly causing harm.....”

Ye Qingyu began planning in his heart.

Zhao Ruyun, Yi Sance and the others seemed to have given up on the surface. They had taken no action whatsoever. But who knew whether this was something that they did on purpose to show weakness deliberately?

Ye Qingyu returned to the fourth floor of the White Horse tower, beginning to train yet again.

No matter at what time, power was the most important.

As long as one had enough power, they could completely crush every sinister and nefarious scheme.

By the time night descended, the wind and snow in the air were even greater and stronger.

Ye Qingyu opened his eyes after he had finished cultivating. Through the window, he was able to see the huge snowstorm occurring outside. A thought suddenly occurred to him.

“Youyan pass is a place of the extreme cold. Cold ice rules over all. If I impart such a power into my inner yuan, would I be able to obtain ice

inner yuan?” As the time of the Spirit raise was approaching, Ye Qingyu knew that he must make some attempts to [Spirit raise]. Within Youyan Pass, there were many experts that possessed the power of ice inner yuan. This meant that this path was possible. Ice belonged to one of the mutations of water in the five elements, possessing an extremely great power.

Chapter 146 – Attempt to Spirit raise

Ye Qingyu had considered whether to attempt to [Spirit raise] other types of attributes in his inner yuan. But ultimately, he chose to forgo doing this.

The price was too high, and it would take far too long. The costs outweighed the benefits.

As he thought of this, he slowly stood up. He left the prayer mat and came before the window.

Outside the White Horse tower, white snow were flying and cold winds were howling.

A dangerous area like Youyan Pass, had years of accumulated snow. At least half the year was spent in the season of great snowstorms. Even in the entire Snow country, one would be hard pressed to find a location that was colder than Youyan Pass. If he really wanted to cultivate ice inner yuan, then this was indisputably the most optimal location.

Ye Qingyu had once seen the procedure and techniques for the [Spirit raise] in the libraries of White Deer.

Such techniques could not be counted as a great secret for martial artists.

Ye Qingyu slowly extended his hand out as a thought occurred to him.

A snowflake, landed on the centre of his palm.

A minute cold feeling came at him.

With Ye Qingyu's current level of strength, even if he exposed his entire body, he would not fear the cold. Once someone's strength reached the Xiantian stage and once Spirit springs were excavated in the dantian world, then on some level you were immune to fire and water. When the snowflake landed on his hand, it very quickly began to melt.

"To want to [Spirit raise] and control ice inner yuan, one must absorb the ice qi of Heaven and Earth into your body and fuse it with your inner yuan. Only after doing this and activating your inner yuan, can you possess the power of ice. The power of ice is extremely vast. According to the legends of the far ancient ages, experts that have cultivated to the extreme in ice yuan qi is capable of great feats. With their ice qi striking out, they were able freeze all matter. There is nothing that they cannot destroy. Even time itself, can be frozen!"

Ye Qingyu remembered the legends that he had read in books, describing the acts of legendary experts.

It was said that in the ancient age, there was a legendary class expert of the human race that had absorbing the extreme cold power of heaven and earth into his body that became fundamentally invincible. He was able to freeze time and space, ruling an era.

Ye Qingyu had once thought that to rely on the pure power of ice to freeze space, was far too ridiculous. Perhaps the only reason this was able to be done, was because this legendary class expert had already

comprehended the laws of ice.

But no matter what, imbuing his inner yuan with the ice attribute, was absolutely the most optimal choice for him right now.

“Phew....”

He settled down his thoughts, slowly breathing in a mouthful of cold air.

Ye Qingyu decided he would attempt the process of Spirit raising right now.

Twenty Spirit springs was the universally recognised starting point for someone to [Spirit raise]. Right now, he was at the fifteen Spirit springs. If he attempted to do this early, then when he truly reached the twenty Spirit springs stage, he would have gained familiarity with this process. With this experience, he would be able to succeed in [Spirit raising] in one fell swoop.

Ye Qingyu suspected, that those rumoured to have succeeded in [Spirit raising] as soon as they reached twenty spirit springs, had attempted it before. It was very possible that they had done a great deal of preparation beforehand so they could do it in one attempt.

All of the yuan qi in his body activated. Ye Qingyu entered into an extremely relaxed state.

Ye Qingyu controlled his body as he activated the nameless heart sutra.

He allowed every pore on his skin to open, shutting off his mouth and nose. He only used the skin on his body to breathe. Every pore on his body was in a state that the naked eye could not perceive, opening and closing. Inhaling and exhaling, he absorbed the cold qi of heaven and earth through his skin.

Spirit spring martial artists, could already breathe without using their nose or mouth.

With the minute control they had over their body, every part of their skin and every muscle on their body, could be used to exchange energy with Heaven and Earth. This was akin to a fetus like state, but also differed to some extent.

Ye Qingyu's consciousness enveloped everywhere around his body.

Ye Qingyu could clearly sense, that under such a state, the cold qi of heaven and earth was entering into his body drop by drop through his pores at this moment.

Even with his current strength, he could very quickly sense tingles of coldness.

“Drawing cold qi into my body is the first step. I must wait until the cold qi has accumulated to the limits of what my body can bear. Then what I need to afterwards is to use my inner yuan to carry this cold qi and make it travel around my meridians in my body, changing the nature of my body. I must be extremely careful in this process. I cannot expel the cold qi out but I also must not allow the cold qi to damage my body.....”

Ye Qingyu's mind recalled the different techniques contained in the various books. He continued with this process.

The books that he had browsed through in the library of White Deer academy contained techniques on how to Spirit raise. However they were only the introductory techniques of how to [Spirit raise]; they were basic and foundational techniques. Ye Qingyu believed that in some noble families with truly deep resources, perhaps there were even more profound techniques that specialised in [Spirit raising] for different attributes. But there was a point, that could not be disputed in the martial world : the path greatness lay in simplicity. There were many times, that the most basic and most commonly seen techniques where the strongest techniques without any flaw whatsoever.

Therefore he decided, to use the most common technique to [Spirit raise].

He stayed in this prenatal like state for a whole two hours.

Ye Qingyu slowly sensed, that he cold qi in his body was about to reach a threshold. His body was as if it was frozen stiff, becoming somewhat dumb and hard. It was as if his entire body was about to turn into an ice sculpture.

This represented that he could proceed to the next stage.

He carefully and slowly used his inner yuan, to carry this ice cold qi throughout his body. This cold qi travelled through his acupuncture points and meridians.

This process, was extremely painful.

As if there were tens of thousands of needles piercing through his muscles and bones.

Cultivation, was originally an extremely painful process.

Ye Qingyu bit his teeth, continuing to activate his inner yuan.

He knew that the early stages of [Spirit raise] was such that you had to experience such a painful process. Any process that wanted to change the foundation of your body was like so. After his body had slowly adapted to the power of ice and snow, the pain would gradually disappear. Then, there would be a comfortable feeling of the body uniting with the soul. After that, when his inner yuan became mellow and full, then he could completely control the power of snow, ice and frost.

Another two hours passed.

The surface of Ye Qingyu's body already began to seep with cold sweat.

Cold Sweat the size of yellow beans dripped down from his forehead.

The clothes on his body was like it were completely seeped in water. His garments were completely drenched.

Ye Qingyu's first attempt had ended. The power of ice and frost, after travelling through his meridians and the blood vessels in his body had

nearly been completely expended in this process. If he activated his inner yuan to revolve around his body for several more days, he would not feel as much pain anymore.

Ye Qingyu's palm spat out shreds of his inner yuan.

In the pale yuan qi light, there was a thin shred of cold qi that brought with it a minute coldness.

“My first attempt to [Spirit raise], really succeeded.”

He was very excited.

That there were already coldness in his yuan qi was already a very good beginning.

If he continued to train, through the accumulation of days and month, there would soon be a day where he could completely control the power of frost and ice. At that time, along with the activation of his inner yuan, snow and ice was sure to follow. As his yuan qi struck out, everywhere it passed, everything would transform into ice. This was the true power of ice inner yuan.

Outside the window, the long night passed.

Under the dome of heaven, wind and snow had no end.

After a small rest, Ye Qingyu continued to train.

.....

.....

In the next few days, Ye Qingyu used the time to his utmost to train.

Wen Wan also came to the White Horse tower several times, but there was still no news regarding Ye Congyun.

Under Wen Wan's advice, Ye Qingyu chose not to use the permission of the Pass Lord's office and head towards the army camps to select new White Horse sword slaves. The turbulent winds and waves had not yet passed. Various factions were still paying attention of White Horse tower. At this time, if he went to select people, there would definitely be some careful people who would arrange for spies to enter White Horse tower.

Ye Qingyu footing was still unstable at Youyan Pass, it was hard to differentiate these spies from normal people.

Wen Wan's proposal, was for Ye Qingyu select ten from the silver armoured soldiers under his command. But after Ye Qingyu thought it over, he did not accept.

He estimated that he would remain in Youyan Pass for a very long time.

There were only ten places on the list of White Horse sword slave.

Every one of this position was precious and valuable. Ye Qingyu needed to personally select who was able to become a White Sword slave. Apart from Bai Yuanxing, the other nine must be loyal and talented. Only then, was there value in developing them. Perhaps later they could become his left and right arm, aiding him and taking charge of a section.

As of right now, he would prefer to go without than go with the shoddy option.

Time passed by day by day.

The time of departure, came closer and closer.

Apart from training, Ye Qingyu would also choose some suitable weapons left behind by the previous masters of White Horse tower to train. It should prove to be of use on the battlefield. He would also go to the martial store of the army, selecting some books and topics regarding war, martial laws of the army, Youyan Pass army battle records, the maps of the Explosive Snow glacier, the battle methods of the demon races and various books to read.

Know yourself and know the enemy, Then, you will be victorious in a hundred battles.

Wen Wan would come to White Horse tower at least once every day. He would very patiently answer the questions Ye Qingyu asked. He retold his experience of going out in battle, and fighting against the army of demon race. He passed down all his insights into such expeditions onto Ye Qingyu.

Martial artists with fifteen Spirit springs could absolutely be counted as an expert of experts within the school life of White Deer academy, But swords and spears had no eyes in the battlefield. Even experts of the Spirit spring stage that had successfully [Spirit raised] has an possibility of perishing. If his luck was poor, when the two armies met, Ye Qingyu's life would be in danger.

Wen Wan was evidently worried for this Demon King Ye.

“I will apply to participate in this operation, so I can look after you.” Wen Wan in these days, had always requested the commander of the Vanguard to allow him to accompany Ye Qingyu. Wen Wan hoped to participate in the [Gale operation]. This way, he could take care of Ye Qingyu on the battlefield. But he had not received a reply as of yet.

Time passed in the days where the skies were covered in snow.

In the blink of an eye, there was only five days left till the day of departure.

According the the previous arrangement, Ye Qingyu could open the jade piece at this moment.

According to the method passed on by Mister Liu, he unlocked the jade piece. His consciousness entered within. Very quickly, he was able obtain the information contained inside.

A great quantity of information and reports must be gathered before middle sized and large scale military operations could begin. There were

large number of simulations and double checks that needed to be done. Furthermore, it was essential for a meticulous and accurate plan of action to be drawn up. They needed to gather a vast amount of human power, financial power, intelligence, and materials, it was not a snap decision by the commander.

Within the military jade piece, every arrangement inside was very detailed.

Of course, the information Ye Qingyu received from this military jade piece, was only a part of the whole equation. It was not complete —only a small number of high level decision makers like the generals, had the right and power to know the contents of the entire plan. Military officers of the middle level and below would only receive part of the information of the entire operation from the jade piece.

As he finished with the military order jade piece, Ye Qingyu fell silent for a moment then began to make his preparations.

Chapter 147 – Someone wants to see you

The afternoon of that day.

Ye Qingyu went to the military supply department for the third time. According to the contents of the military jade piece, he went there to obtain the various tools and resources he needed for this operation.

The position of the patrolling sword envoy was not low. Every time they went into battle, they were able to receive the needed resources free of charge.

This time, Ye Qingyu did not see Zhao Ruyun at the military supply department.

But the soldiers and officers of the supply department had gazes burning with hostility when they saw Ye Qingyu. No matter what their relationship was with Zhao Ruyun, since Ye Qingyu had struck Zhao Ruyun, this was equal to striking the entire supply department on the face. Evidently, from top to bottom, the supply department did not hold any good feelings towards Ye Qingyu.

As for the military officer in charge of approving the resource request , he was a middle aged man.

His face had a smile that was not a smile. With a slightly cold gaze, he stared at Ye Qingyu for a short moment before signing the request.

Even if so, as he obtained the allocated military resources, Ye Qingyu could not help but shake his head.

Evidently, the people of the military supply department had ultimately something to the supplies. The medicines and herbs that Ye Qingyu received was of low quality; the large majority were either not of enough years yet or dried and withered. The armour and weapons he obtained were also rusty and old, evidently not the best of the lot.

“It’s said that in the army, one must not offend people from the supply department. It seems that this saying is not false at all.”

Ye Qingyu smiled, not disputing anything.

In such a situation, the supply department had already allocated the resources according to the instructions on the military jade piece. On some level, they had already fulfilled their duty. If he made an issue out of this, not only could he not gain any advantage, but instead he would give off an impression that he was a pain that fussed over minor matters.

This was the supply department of the Empire. To think that they would be so stagnant and stuck in the old ways, disregarding the greater good, really made Ye Qingyu feel disappointed.

After returning to the White Horse tower, Ye Qingyu placed some of the resources that he had no use for in the stores of White Horse tower like rubbish. He arranged for the White Horse sword slave Bai Yuanxing to take care of it.

At that time, the Big Head who was in the midst of slumber finally woke up.

After considering for a moment, Ye Qingyu placed this glutton into his embrace. Then he gathered the clothing and resources he had long prepared. When it was evening, he left White Horse tower, heading towards the army to report for duty.

This was the arranged time on the military jade piece.

Bai Yuanxing and Mother Wu was left behind to look after White Horse tower.

.....

.....

One day later.

Twenty miles away from Youyan Pass.

A formation airship with the clouds shrouding it's presence, slowly travelled closer to the Explosive Snow glacier.

Ye Qingyu stood at the forefront of the airship.

The long wind blew, mist and fog drifted everywhere.

This airship was twenty metres long and five metres wide. It was constructed in a similar way to the rafts on the river. Sleek and streamlined, a pale white colour, it was created with a metal material that Ye Qingyu had never seen before. There were tight clustered formations carved on the exterior of the airship. The heart of the ship was operated using the Origin crystal as a power source, and hence it could easily traverse through the air. The noise made from this ship was extremely little, and it's colour was also similar to the surrounding white clouds. If one was far away, and did not examine carefully, it was very hard to discover its existence.

There was a formation field around the airship that enveloped everything inside. It blocked the cold strong wind outside.

Ye Qingyu sat cross legged at the head of the ship.

And on the metal plates behind him, there stood nearly a hundred soldiers donning silver armour.

These soldiers were elite soldiers that were chosen carefully from the Vanguard camp. The lowest of their strength was at the first Spirit spring level. They were led by a warfare officer called Liu Zongyuan, that stood silently on the metal plates of the airship. Every one of them were like stone sculptures, persistent and determined, awaiting the arrival of battle.

Ultimately, Wen Wan could not participate in this time [Gale operation].

Ye Qingyu vaguely knew, that the number of soldiers taking part in this operation this time were near ten thousand. The Vanguard had allocated twenty military officers, and the Right and Left camp had also allocated another twenty military officers to command this operation. In coordination with five patrolling sword envoys, there were countless experts of the military that embarked on this mission. With a deputy commander class leader leading the way, they set off towards the dangerous area guarded by the [Southern incline legion] of the Snow ground demon race.

Just from the numbers and military power invoked, one could judge that this was an extremely important military operation.

Forty military officers of all camps, according to the prearranged plan, set off towards different directions.

Ye Qingyu's formation airship flew alone. During the night, it embarked and flew through the air. Travelling at a very slow speed, it borrowed the cover of the clouds throughout the sky and slowly headed towards a Northern direction.

The airship's highest commander, Liu Zongyuan, was a silent expert. The first time they met, he had only slightly nodded at Ye Qingyu and not spoken a single word more. He was like a boulder that did not speak. Every military order was issued by his deputy commander. The two people had evidently worked together for a lengthy period of time, and was hence extremely coordinated.

Ye Qingyu had also secretly observed this Liu Zongyuan.

From his appearance, this person seemed to be around thirty years of age. With a muscular figure, wide back and shoulders, he had a robust exterior. He was wearing silver armour with a white cape behind his back. There was also a huge battle blade that was hung behind his back. The inner yuan in his body was vast and deep, his strength unfathomable. At the very least, the current Ye Qingyu could not see through the cultivation stage that Liu Zongyuan was in.

“If I do not remember wrongly, this Liu Zongyuan is ranked eighty three on the [Military star list]. He can be counted as a powerful character within the Vanguard camp; his ranking is even higher than Wen Wan.”

Ye Qingyu furtively recalled in his heart.

The soldiers under Liu Zongyuan’s command was as silent as him.

This airship, was like a spirit ship that traversed and sliced apart the clouds without making any sounds. It swam slowly through the dome of heaven.

The military order in the jade piece was very simple. Ye Qingyu was to coordinate with Liu Zongyuan’s operations. On one hand he had to survey military discipline, recording the battle deeds of the various soldiers and the other hand, he had to fight at crucial moments. He was there to guarantee the success of the military officer’s mission. As for what Liu Zongyuan’s mission would be, since Liu Zongyuan did not mention it, Ye Qingyu had no way of knowing.

But from the speed and route of this airship, Ye Qingyu guessed, that

the people on this mission should not be part of the main battle force. They should be playing some sort of coordinating role or preparing a surprise ambush.

Without knowing why, Ye Qingyu vaguely felt through his observation, that this Liu Zongyuan did not have any warm feelings towards him. He even held a faint enmity towards Ye Qingyu.

“Could it be that he is also someone of the Cool breeze mountain faction?”

Ye Qingyu guessed.

On the way, apart from the occasional rest, Ye Qingyu spent the large majority of time sat cross legged at the forefront of the ship, circulating his qi and training.

On the noon of that day, the head of the formation airship suddenly changed directions. It headed straight towards West and increased its speed slightly.

Clouds and mist were everywhere throughout the skies. The vision was limited. One was only able to see a hundred metres into the skies. Ye Qingyu did not know just where this air ship was heading. He could not even see the terrain down below. He could only vaguely sense the direction it was travelling. Time passed extremely slowly, the airship completely silent. Ye Qingyu felt very bored.

The way the ship travelled seemed not to have any rules whatsoever.

Sometimes it would speed up, sometimes it would stop as if it was waiting for something. It completely did not seem to be following any military orders, but rather soared on aimlessly.

There were several times that Ye Qingyu wanted to ask the reason for this. But as his gaze met the figure of Liu Zongyuan that was as silent as a boulder, for some reason he dispersed such an intention.

In such a state, three days slowly passed by.

On the way, they did not encounter any squads of demon race soldiers or other airships. Not to mention battle, even a state of alert and caution did not happen.

They continued to slowly travel through the clouds. It was as if they had entered into a silent and white world. The slow passing of time was so stifling that it made one mad.

“Through our travel, we have halted many times over. Perhaps we received an order that came from the military or perhaps it was to detect the defences of the demon race and prevent discovery of our presence. We are trying to hide from the demon race. Could it be that for our mission we must enter deep into the territory of the Explosive Snow glacier?” Ye Qingyu gradually understood. But it was hard to imagine what kind of method was being used to communicate with the army at Youyan pass. The technology of the formations far exceeded his previous imagination.

It made Ye Qingyu realise even more, that coming to Youyan Pass was the correct choice.

Only at such a place would his vision of the world expand. He would not spent his life confined within a little city. If he stayed, he would live a mediocre life and his sight would never stretch far. His vision would always be confined to one corner

The fifth day.

Ye Qingyu could not make clear, just how far the airship had travelled.

At that time, the airship stopped. The formation on the centre of the airship stopped functioning, and the air ship silently floated in the clouds like a hidden claw. The soldiers on the armoured plates also began to be cautious. Liu Zongyuan always sat on the armoured plates. The sensation he gave off, was as if he was a patient hunter that was hiding within the clouds, silently waiting for the arrival of his prey. Then he would kill it in one strike.

In the expressions of Liu Zongyuan and the others, Ye Qingyu could see a shred of anxiousness.

This indirectly confirmed Ye Qingyu's guess.

He and these people, must be deep within the Explosive Snow glacier at this time. Once they were discovered by the demon race, what faced them was a gigantic disaster.

During this time, Liu Zongyuan had entered twice into the cabin inside the airship.

Every time, not long after Liu Zongyuan entered, he would come outside and issue new orders.

“Most likely within the cabin, there is a truly great leader of the army sitting there giving out commands. So the highest commander of this airship, is not the military officer Liu Zongyuan.” Ye Qingyu suddenly realised this point.

On the way, Ye Qingyu had not asked any questions of his initiative. He was like an outsider, silently observing everything that occurred.

Sunset.

Night time came.

The armoured soldiers became increasingly cautious and nervous.

Ye Qingyu approximated the time.

If the previous military plan had not changed, then he believe at this time the Vanguard Camp, the Right camp, Left camp, these main battle force should already be directly doing battle with the [Southern incline legion] of the demon race. This time, it was a large scale military campaign with over ten thousand people participating. It must be incomparable tragic on the battlefield. Every moment and every second, there were lifeforms perishing, and every moment and every second there were martial experts falling.....

“The mission that we are doing, just what is it?”

Ye Qingyu became increasingly curious.

Youyan Pass had planned such a large scale military operation. It should not be as Wen Wan had said, that this was for them to train the soldiers and investigate the military power of the demon race. It was most likely that there was some special aim apart from this.

And he himself, in such a battle, just what role would he play?

The black night descended.

And when Ye Qingyu had his eyes closed in thought, the military officer Liu Zongyuan for the first time took the initiative to find him. He stood in front of Ye Qingyu.

“What is it?” Ye Qingyu opened his eyes.

Liu Zongyuan had no expression on his face. He said slowly: “Officer Ye, someone wants to see you.”

Ye Qingyu was taken aback. : “Who is it?”

“You’ll know when you see him.” Liu Zongyuan turned around, heading towards the cabin of the airship. “Please follow me.”

Chapter 148 – Drinking some tea and having a conversation

Ye Qingyu was full of questions as he followed behind Liu Zongyuan. They entered into the cabin of the airship.

As they followed the stairs down, there was another corridor.

On the two sides of the corridor there were armoured soldiers guarding this passageway.

After arriving at the cabin room, Liu Zongyuan made a motion for Ye Qingyu to go ahead.

Ye Qingyu pushed open the doors of the cabin, walking inside alone by himself.

Within the cabin, the space was extremely expansive. It was as if it was a silent room rather than a cabin in an airship. The furnishings were extremely elegant and there was a faint fragrance of tea in the air.

Mister Liu had a slight smile on his face. He was wearing green clothes and sat cross legged on a woven grass prayer mat. There was a vine table next to him and on it, was a clay tea set. Beside him was Xinger wearing white robes. He was currently at the stove, boiling water. With his hair tied up in a bun, he sat on the left of the prayer mat and was currently peacefully preparing the tea. His movements were elegant and extremely gentle. Evidently, he had been immersed in the way of the tea for a

period of time already.

In the cabin, there was the the fragrance of the tea permeating the air. It gave off an extremely peaceful and leisurely atmosphere.

“Officer Ye, we meet again.” Mister Liu smiled, pointing towards the prayer mat opposite him. “These days, I’ve wanted to speak with you very much. Please sit.”

Ye Qingyu considered for a moment, then sat quietly on the mat. Evaluating his surrounding environment, he then said: “I wonder for what matter did you want to talk to me about?”

“The night is long, I just wanted to converse with someone. Therefore I sought out officer Ye to drink some tea and have some conversation.” Mister Liu had a faint smile as he said these words.

“So it was like this. Thank you, I was namely thirsty.” Ye Qingyu knew that since Mister Liu had sought him out, there was a matter he wanted to discuss. But since he did not want to say it openly, then Ye Qingyu could only remain silent and observe and see what kind of medicine the strategist of the Pass Lord’s residence was selling in his gourd.

Xinger had completely changed from his lively demeanour where he bounced about. He was as peaceful as a girl.

Xinger finished boiling the water, preparing the tea. He placed a cup in front of Mister Liu, then placed another cup in front of Ye Qingyu.

The faint fragrance of tea, bringing with it a wisp of steam, rose up in front of Ye Qingyu.

“Please.” Mister Liu lifted his cup with a smile to indicate that Ye Qingyu should go ahead.

Ye Qingyu opened his mouth, then used inner yuan to suck the amber coloured tea in the cup completely out, finishing it completely in one gulp.

“Hahaha.....” Mister Liu began chuckling, sipping a bit of his own cup of tea. “Officer Ye, tea is not drank like that.”

Ye Qingyu also began laughing. “I don’t want to taste tea, I only want to solve my thirst.”

“Really the personality of a young man.” Mister Liu considered with a sigh, saying: “To speak the truth, the words of officer Ye, made me suddenly think of a person. Ten years ago, he was also sitting in front of me tasting tea. Like officer Ye, he was young and handsome, with a thriving heroic spirit, a dragon among men. His battle records were outstanding, his future unlimited and boundless. Nearly the entire Youyan pass, thought that he would become the future War God, and was the future successor of the Lord of the North that drove away demons, Lord Lu. A pity, a pity.....”

As he spoke of his, Mister Liu began continuously sighing.

Ye Qingyu smiled faintly. “After hearing this, should I coordinate with

Mister Liu's words and ask just what is a pity?"

Mister Liu was slightly taken aback, then smiled. "What, it seems like officer Ye is not interested in my topic."

"That is not so." Ye Qingyu said seriously. "I am extremely curious, and want to hear the story about what happened afterwards. Please mister, could you tell me, just what happened to this person afterwards?"

"What happened to this person afterwards....." Mister Liu hesitated, tasting the tea in his cup in detail, then slowly closed his eyes, as if he had entered deep into his memories, his face occasionally displaying traces of recollection. Half a moment later, he sighed yet again: "Afterwards, that person fell into the path of the demon, transforming into a demon."

"What ? Transformed into a demon?"

Ye Qingyu was really greatly shocked by this.

Originally he thought, that Mister Liu was being deliberately mystifying. The person of his words, should have died prematurely for some reason.

He had not imagined, that it would be such an ending.

Mister Liu opened his eyes, handing over the tea cup in his hands to Xinger then nodded his head. "That's right, that incomparably heroic person, extraordinary talent, originally was a person that the Youyan

army was going to heavily nourish. From a tiny little military officer to become the deputy general of the Vanguard, he did this in less than three years of time. If everything followed the original plan, he would have become the new hero of Youyan Pass. But it's a pity that during one of the operations targeting the [Southern Incline Legion], that person was self-confident, going deep alone into enemy territory without any other reinforcements. He fell into the [Burning Snow Demon General's] scheme. Surrounded with no aid, in the end his entire army was annihilated. Because he feared for his life, he surrendered to the [Southern Incline Legion], becoming the claws and fangs of the demon race....”

As Ye Qingyu heard this, his heart was extremely shaken.

“There's such a matter?” He said disbelievingly. “A human capitulated to the demon race? This is just.....betraying your ancestors and relinquishing your descent.”

Mister Liu nodded his head, a face filled with regret. “That's right. Originally everyone thought that person perished in battle. But we never imagined that he chose to live his life out in an ignoble existence. When the news came, it shook the entire Youyan Pass, it shook the entire Snow Country. Many people did not believe in this news, suspecting it was the crafty scheme of the demon race. They did not believe it was possible for that person to surrender.....The army investigated, sending numerous people to discover the truth as they headed towards the Explosive Snow Glacier. But they did not manage to discover anything, until that day.....”

As he said to here, a painful expression appeared on the face of Mister Liu.

Half a moment later, he continued. “Until that day, that person led the

great army of the demon race to attack us. Breaking apart twelve lines of defence of Youyan Pass at the outer edges, killing over ten thousand of our human comrades. Youyan Pass including Lord Lu and hundreds of military officers saw with their own eyes, that person leading the personal guards of the Burning Snow demon general. His hand holding the heads of his previous comrades, painting the ice city fresh with blood.....his previous comrades, only at that moment did they believe, that the previous star of the military, really fell into path of becoming a monster.....”

Ye Qingyu was silent. 。

At the start he had a manner of ridicule when he listened to the words of Mister Liu. But as these secrets were said, Ye Qingyu’s heart could not help but be shaken.

He had never imagined, that such a matter had once occurred in Youyan Pass.

One could imagine, just how much impact this had caused back then.

One could imagine, just what kind of rage the Empire sank into.

A scandal like this, the Empire would absolutely completely censor and lock down. So the fact that Ye Qingyu was unaware, was very normal. Only people like Mister Liu who saw with his own eyes just what had happened, could understand the terrifying waves like that of a storm this incident caused?

“The empire was enraged. They sent out top class assassins to head towards the Explosive Snow glacier to kill that person. But they failed to do so. It’s been said that after person capitulated to the demon race and accepted the demon race forbidden techniques, he inserted demon bones into his body. His strength multiplied.....” Mister Liu continued to recount from his memory. “That person was a person with peerless talent, his cultivation far exceeding people of his generation. Once he lasted ten moves against Lord Lu, the Lord of the North that drove away demons, without being defeated. After transplanting a demon bone inside himself, one can imagine just how terrifying he is. The empire once targeted him and organised several operations to get rid of this thorn, but ultimately it all ended in failure!”

Transplanting a demon bone?

Ye Qingyu was slightly in a daze.

By transplanting a demon bone in the human body, would this allow their strength to multiply?

He had never heard of such a technique to before.

Then he heard Mister Liu continue to speak “For the Empire and the army of Youyan Pass, the betrayal of this person, is tantamount to a nightmare. That person is extremely familiar with the function of the military of the empire, and even more familiar with the arrangements and posts of Youyan Pass. He knows the network of defence outside and inside Youyan Pass exceedingly well. In the next few years, under the leadership of that person, the personal guards of the Burning Snow demon general became the nightmare of Youyan Pass. Coming and going without leaving a shadow, they heavily injured the various departments

of Youyan army, causing tragic losses to the Empire. And even the Lord of the North that drove away demons, Lord Lu, nearly fell into their scheme. The intense and ferocious harm he caused was terrible. It could completely be said to be the most serious loss we suffered since the Empire was founded.”

As Ye Qingyu heard this, he sucked in a mouthful of cold air.

That’s right, he was a person that had once been carefully groomed to become the future commander. Once he chose to betray and side with the enemy, just what kind of terrifying consequences he could cause was evident. Even an idiot was able to imagine this just by using their brain slightly.

“Only until two or three years ago, under the bitter struggle and efforts of the people at Youyan Pass, could we get rid of the influence of the betrayal of this person brought, and slowly turn the tides. Youyan Pass is not in a position of absolute disadvantage anymore, but to want to once again be at the upper hand between the struggle with the [Southern Incline legion] of the Snow Ground Demon court, needs great time. Most likely, we need another ten years to once again return to that formerly grand state in the old days. “

It was unknown whether it was sorrow or happiness in Mister Liu’s tone.

As he sighed, he once again drank the tea that Xinger brought over.

Ye Qingyu did not know what to say.

He sat silently looking at Mister Liu., wanting to know the reason why he was invited to come and the reason he spoke such words.

Could it be simply that he was somewhat similar to that person?

Or perhaps.....the story of Mister Liu, was hinting to him about something?

There was a deep silence in the cabin.

Mister Liu once again tasted two cups of tea, slowly stabilising his emotions. Looking at Ye Qingyu, he smiled: “Officer Ye, do you know just what the purpose of the [Gale operation] is?”

Ye Qingyu shook his head. Originally he wanted to blurt out that he did not know anything because the military jade piece did not specify the aim of this operation at all.

With his background, experience, position and status, he did not have the requirements to know such a thing.

But as he lifted his head, seeing the strange smile on Mister Liu’s face, he suddenly realised something. His heart shuddering: “Could it could it be to act against that person?”

Mister Liu began chuckling loudly.

“You’ve guessed correctly.” He said.

Ye Qingyu considered, then asked again: “This time.....do we have any chance?”

“Of course we have a chance.” Mister Liu smiled faintly with confidence. “This time the operation seems like a routine small scale battle that is held in the winter season. But in reality for this, the army of Youyan pass has already prepared for a very, very long period of time. As long as this person is alive, he will always be the great humiliation of Youyan Pass. His very life is mocking the army of Youyan, the entire empire will not allow him to live on. This time, not only have we managed to obtain that person’s route and action plan, even the Lord of the North that drove away demons, Lord Lu will act personally.”

Lu Zhaoge would act personally?

Ye Qingyu heard this, then his heart began beating madly.

The War God of Youyan Pass would act personally?

This was absolutely something that would shake the entire empire if it was leaked out.

One of the ten great warriors, The War God of Youyan Passs, would finally act again after ten years?

One could imagine, just what kind of battle this would be.

Ye Qingyu suddenly realised and comprehended, why Mister Liu would have such confidence.

That's right, if War God Lu decided to act personally then every thing could be said to be finished.

For this, the military of Youyan Pass had prepared for an extremely long period of time. It must be a long planned and premeditated action. Hearing the meaning in Mister Liu's words, the human race must have through some channel, obtained the military plan of that person. This was someone intentionally planning against someone who was unaware. This time, that person would absolutely die.

Chapter 149 – Will of the Martial path

But, whether that person would perish, had nothing to do with Ye Qingyu.

What Ye Qingyu was concerned with, was just why did Mister Liu speak of such a matter to him in such detail?

As the advisor and strategist of the Pass Lord Residence, Mister Liu could absolutely be described as having ten thousand matters to take care of everyday. Those able to stay within the [Military council pavilion], every one of them had the deep trust of War God Lu Zhaoge. And furthermore, this time the army of Youyan Pass had taken such painstaking efforts to plan an operation against that person. According to reason, Mister Liu should be incomparably busy right now, but was instead on a formation airship that headed somewhere unknown and chatting to Ye Qingyu.....

Of course Ye Qingyu did not think that this was because Mister Liu was bored and wanted to find him to pass the time.

For a scholar like Mister Liu, there were countless plans and schemes flashing through his mind at every moment.

Everything he did, every word he said, there was a clear motive behind them.

And right now, just what was Mister Liu's aim?

Ye Qingyu fell silent for a time, then lifted his head: “Then right now, we have flown so covertly for such a long time. We are deep into the territory of the demon race. On the way we have cautiously avoiding all the patrols and checkpoints of the demon race, hiding within the cloud layers. Just what is this all for? Could it be that we are hiding to ambush that person?”

Mister Liu smiled faintly.

“Of course not. I’m not underestimating myself, but that person has a terrifying strength. In the entire Youyan army, apart from Pass Lord Lu and several other people who are able to defeat him, to find a person that is able to last ten moves in front of him is extremely difficult. Even if we considered everyone together on this formation airship and added them together, we will be exploded to bits by just one of his finger in an instant. Not to mention ambush, if we are discovered by him, we only have one path: death. To ambush that person? We are still far, far away from reaching that requirement.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

He knew that Mister Liu spoke the truth.

The terrifying power of that person was able to be completely seen through these short words.

The army had planned for ten years, but was not able to kill him. From that alone, one was able to see just how great his strength was.

He and everyone else on this airship, in front of that person, were just

ants. They completely could not pose as any sort of threat to that person. Even if that person stood still for them to hack into pieces, ultimately they would be killed by the yuan qi protection around his body.

“If it is like so, then can I dare ask mister, just what is the reason for our travel?” Ye Qingyu did not beat around the bush anymore, saying things openly.

Mister Liu smiled: “Our mission is very simple. We are only here to survey the Explosive Snow glacier, to record down the surrounding terrain.”

“You mean....to create a map?” Ye Qingyu’s heart thumped.

“You are not wrong. But we are not just simply creating a map. These years, because of the betrayal of that person, the empire has always been at a complete disadvantage in the Northern front lines. Our power has no way of entering into the territory of the Explosive Snow glacier. We are lacking in understanding of the terrain, the topography, as well as the concentration of Spirit qi in different areas. This time, the military has planned a scheme to target that person. Apart from killing the greatest traitor in history, we also hope to use this opportunity, to clearly understand the terrain of the Explosive snow glacier. We are currently observing the military power and arrangements of the [Southern incline legion] at this area. One can imagine, once the true operation begins, this area will definitely enter into a chaotic state. That will be our opportunity.”

Mister Liu patiently explained.

So it was like this.

Ye Qingyu had finally understood a little.

This time, the [Gale operation] was definitely well planned and meticulous in all aspects.

From this, one could comprehend the ambition of the military.

Not only did they want to kill that traitor, they also wanted to gather information of the terrain and topography, and the distribution of military power of Demon race.....this was evidently making preparations to invade into the Explosive Snow glacier.

Could it be that the Empire was currently preparing for the third large scale battle against the Snow Ground Demon court?

“If there are not any mistakes in this plan, then it should be tomorrow morning that the true battle begins. Once the [Southern incline legion] is disturbed, and that person enters into battle, he will enter into our prepared trap. Once that person has perished, the Explosive snow glacier must be completely chaotic. And then, our opportunity will have arrived.” Mister Liu had a faint smile, slowly sipping his tea.“

Even though he was a scholar with weak power, but he was not nervous in the slightest in such a dangerous area.

This calm and unperturbed spirit, really made someone admire him.

And as for the little student Xinger next to him, he was as calm as a rock that did not know fear.

Ye Qingyu drank four cups of tea in succession.

When Xinger handed the fifth cup, he shook his head, standing up. “If Mister does not have any more orders, then I’ll first go out and prepare for the matters tomorrow.”

Mister Liu nodded his head.

When Ye Qingyu turned and left the cabin, in the corner of his eyes, he saw that the clear and large eyes of Xinger had always been staring at him.

.....

.....

Returning to the armoured plates.

“Eh? You’ve changed your armour?”

Ye qingyu was surprised to discover, that the originally armoured soldiers on the armoured plate had changed away from their silver armour. Instead, they were wearing a strange beast skin demon armour.

These beast skin demon armour, was namely the uniform of the soldiers of the Snow ground demon race. The texture was crude and the appearance bloated. The material was made from the fur of some unknown beast as well as metal that was found mainly in the Explosive snow glacier. There was a clear difference between it and the armour of the human race. The demon armour had a primitive and violent style and there was a faint demon qi pulsing from the armour.,

Even the warfare officer, Liu Zongyuan had donned the demon armour.

“It seems like this is for another layer of protection. By disguising ourselves to look like the demon race, perhaps we can escape in the confusion at a crucial time.”

Ye Qingyu understood.

He sat cross-legged at the armoured plates at the head of the airship, activating his inner yuan. He breathed in and out according to the nameless heart sutra, constantly optimising his state, making preparations for the possible battle of tomorrow.

Six hours later.

There was a soldier bringing a set of demon armour, respectfully handing it to Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu wore the [White horse armour] on his body, then wore this set of demon armour over it on the outside. The black bear skin cap

covered the large majority of his face. His entire body emitted with a sour and bloody odour, demon qi emitting from his body. If one could not see the face, they would really think that he was a soldier of the demon race.

At the time he donned the demon armour, on the sky far off, a slight ray of the sun of dawn was exposed.

The new day, was about to descend.

The morning wind was like blades.

Mister Liu slowly walked out from the cabin.

Behind him was the student Xinger who had similarly changed and put on the demon armour.

As he greeted Ye Qingyu by nodding his head, Mister Liu came to the head of the airship under the protection of the warfare officer Liu Zongyuan and six other elite soldiers. He stood shoulder to shoulder next to Ye Qingyu.

“It is about to begin!”

Mister Liu moved his fingers, calculating the time, then turned his head to look at the South West direction. He spoke lightly.

Before he had finished.

Boom!

A undulation that seemed to be there but not there, began shuddering from the South west direction.

In truth, the position that Ye Qingyu and the others were in right now was very far away in distance from the centre of the yuan qi explosion. If they looked, the limits of their vision could not discern any abnormal happenings. If they did their utmost to hear, the limits of their hearing could not hear any sound. But any martial artist, any of the demon race, at this instant, through a method that even they themselves were not aware of, was able to sense this terrifying fluctuation.

The sensation that it gave, was as if a bolt of lighting exploded in their hearts in an instant.

It was a type of power that directly impacted their Spirit and their soul.

Terrifying!

Profound!

“Will of the Martial Path!”

The Liu Zongyuan that had always remained silent, finally opened his mouth.

“A hundred miles away, there are experts with cultivation level at the

Bitter Sea stage and above that has acted. This really is a very frightening power of their consciousness.”

On the face of this Warfare officer, there was a look of yearning.

Will of the Martial path?

After Ye Qingyu was slightly taken aback, his heart finally understood.

So this strange undulation, was the legendary Will of the martial path that experts possessed.

He had once seen at White Deer academy, within the historical narratives books about this phenomenon. It was said that in legend, that true top experts, not only were their flesh body and inner yuan trained to the extreme limits, the power of their consciousness was also like invulnerable steel. Through just a thought, their vast consciousness could extend in all directions, causing the lifeforms hundreds, thousands of miles away to feel their unshakeable will. It caused them to shudder as if they had witnessed a deity appearing.

Ye Qingyu had only heard about this so called Will of the martial path through books.

This mysterious sensation that he had personally experienced gave him a deeper understanding as to what exactly it was. His heart was incomparably shocked.

Through just a thought of someone hundreds of miles away, it could

cause his spirit to be so greatly shaken. Just what was kind of terrifying existence was it?

Could it be that the War God of Youyan Pass, Lu Zhaoge, that had acted?

Just as Ye Qingyu was questioning ——

Boom!

It was another wave of Will of the martial path that exploded.

This time, the Will of the martial path, was not as peaceful and calm as first. It contained a killing intent and viciousnesses that soared to the sky. It was as if a blood ocean that completely covered the sky was pressuring and crushing towards them.

In such an unprepared state, Ye Qingyu could feel his vision darkening. His figure shuddered, nearly shouting. In an instant, it was as if his entire body was submerged into a pool of blood. A fear that he could hardly control, spread throughout his body. It was as if the Death God suddenly appeared tens of metres away from him, or as if he was being stared at by some huge gigantic primordial beast. Cold sweat instantly seeped out from forehead of Ye Qingyu.....

On the armoured plates.

The other soldiers were already loudly screaming.

The soldier with the lowest strength let out a tragic shout. With a crash, he fell, directly struck by the killing intent contained in this Will of the martial path. He fainted.

Even Liu Zongyuan, let out a fierce and low grunt.

Evidently in front of this Will of the martial path, he was also adversely affected.

In that instant, the countless lifeforms hundreds of miles around, no matter whether it was intelligent or unknowing ants, was affected. Above the sky, under the icy grounds, millions of life forms were completely shaken by this bloody Will of the martial path. They were so scared they were shivering and shuddering in terror.

In the time of the spark of a flint, Ye Qingyu reacted. He suddenly thought of something, crying in disdain in his heart. Activating his inner yuan, he moved to block in front of Mister Liu.....

Mister Liu did not know any martial arts. If he was struck by such an impact, would there be a risk to his life?

But when Ye Qingyu turned his head to look, he was shocked to discover that Mister Liu was wearing a jade piece between the eyebrows. It was emitting a pale silver aura, tangible but with no substance, like a dim lantern. It had completely dispersed that terrifying strike of the Will of the martial path.

And as for the student Xinger that stood next to Mister Liu, without knowing why, his expression was completely peaceful. It was as if he had not sensed this terrifying undulation at all.

Chapter 150 – Turning of the Snow dragon

“There are top experts exchanging blows.”

The expression of Liu Zongyuan became more solemn and serious.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, looking towards the direction of the south west.

At this time, the airship that he and the others were on, after five days of flight, had already entered deep into the territory of the Explosive Snow glacier. The frontal battlefield of the [Gale operation] was evidently occurring at the outer boundaries of the Explosive Snow glacier. The battle should have already started and was enveloping everywhere. Right now, they should be having a brief clash between the two forces, an intertwining of fangs. After tens of years of fighting and opposing each other, both parties knew each other very well. There would not be a scene where one party was completely annihilated. Today, it was evidently time for the top class experts to clash.

Ye Qingyu did not know just what the plan of the army was.

But since this battle had started, this meant that everything was progressing according to plan.

The first person who emitted the Will of the martial path, should be a commander of the great army at Youyan Pass. Then the second vicious and ominous Will of the martial path, could it be that it was emitted from that person?

That person had shown himself?

Ye Qingyu silently pondered in his heart.

At that time——

“Fine, we can begin.” Mister Liu said as he tied the front of his robe at his waist, his body as straight as a javelin. Taking several step forwards, he stood at the head of the airship, slowly controlling his breathing. As if he was a martial artist optimising his state before battle. There was an armoured soldier that brought over a huge, green stone table. On it was a snowy white jade like beast skin scroll.

When the Scroll was unrolled, it was completely white and blank inside.

Xinger stood in front of this stone table. From a dimensional pouch, he took out a bear butterfly stone ink slab, a ink stick of dragon blood treasure ink, and a piece of azure mysterious ice.

Using the heat of his palm to melt this mysterious ice, he then dipped the dragon blood treasure ink stick in the water in the bear butterfly ink slab. Using a blunt metal little dagger, he began grinding. Under such a gentle action, the dragon blood treasure ink stick very quickly began dissolving in the bear butterfly ink slab. One was able to see scarlet red blood ink appear. The faint and strange fragrance of ink began dispersing in the air, giving off a comfortable feeling that relaxed the hearts of people.

Xinger's movement was gentle and calm, with every move and movement like a smooth dance. It was as if each and every one of her actions contained the essence of Heaven's way.

Ye Qingyu witnessed for the first time, that someone was able to perfect a little thing like grinding ink to such a perfect movement.

The airship had no sounds or other actions occurring on it. It slowly swam through the clouds and mist.

Then the height of the airship lowered.

The white clouds became thinner and thinner.

If Ye Qingyu surveyed below, he could finally clearly see everything under him.

He could not help but sigh with admiration in his heart.

A vast ice and snow continent, where the mountain ranges were like silver snakes. It was a candle wax like continent.

Although just through the name of the Explosive Snow glacier, one could be able to imagine, that this continent was a ground that was completely covered by ice and snow; a extremely cold place. But by personally seeing the endless white snow ground, seeing ice peaks that were like deities mistakenly descended to mortal lands, seeing strand

after strand of huge fissures in the ground like the movement of a dragon, Ye Qingyu was shaken. This was an entire world that was formed by ice and snow. It was too beautiful and too bizarre, like it was divine scenery.

This was a world ruled by ice and snow.

No wonder the demon race here, was known as the Snow ground demon race.

“Everyone careful!”

Liu Zongyuan let out a low shout, ordering the soldiers to be on full alert.

The soldiers who were also shaken by this scene of the beautiful snow, awakened.

Ye Qingyu also quickly recovered.

He knew that even then though this ice world was beautiful , it was only suitable for viewing from far away. If one really was to live in such an environment, then it was absolutely a frightening experience. The instance the cold exploded, it was enough to reap away countless life. Without the cover of vegetation, without food, it was unknown just how the demon race was able to survive in such a harsh environment.

No wonder in these years, that the Southern ground demon race dreamed to go South through Youyan Pass, and wanted to take over the

territory that belonged to Snow country.

Everything, was for the reproduction and multiplication of their race.

It was unknown when a scarlet red brush was held in the hands of Mister Liu.

These brushes were special, each one about the thickness of a little baby's arm. Simple looking, on the body of each brush there was a coiled dragon carved on it. The tip of the brush was lustrous and plump. It was unknown what lifeforms the fur the tip of this brush was created from. After it had been dyed with dragon blood ink, it emitted a pale radiance. As if it were two stars that was radiating fluorescent light in the night, it caused someone to be dazzled and dazed.

Both hands of Mister Liu acted at the same time, unendingly drawing across the snowy white scroll.

It was as if a deity was drawing.

Ye Qingyu carefully looked, and what Mister Liu was drawing, was namely the terrain and topography of the Explosive snow glacier below.

Everywhere the air ship passed, everything below, that was seen in Mister Liu's eyes, was drawn onto the scroll.

The speed at which he used his brushes was extremely quick. Only with a slight glance, he was able to replicate everything below exactly on the snowy white scroll, with no discernible difference. With only a few

strokes, he drew miles of land below the airship onto the scroll. The lines were smooth and flowing. It caused one to have the impression that everything on the scroll was alive, as if the terrain would jump out from the scroll, as if it was a projection that would appear in front of someone.

Consummate and exquisite drawing skill!

It was nearly like a 'way'.

Ye Qingyu finally slightly understood, why Mister Liu was entrusted with a dangerous mission that needed for him to personally deeply enter into enemy territory.

If they could really completely travel around the Explosive Snow glacier, then nothing could be hidden about the demon race. If this mission was successfully executed, then everything on the Explosive snow glacier would be as familiar to Youyan Pass as their own hands. In the future, if they needed to take military actions against the demon court, than the probability of success would be even higher.

At this time, Ye Qingyu suddenly realised that the importance of his mission was not low at all.

Time passed minute by second.

A hour later, the snowy white scroll on the green stone table had been completely painted full by the drawings.

The dragon blood treasure ink, had also been completely expended.

Mister Liu out a long exhalation of air. Hot air steamed around his body. Evidently such a long process of painting was a matter that exhausted his energy very much.

The armoured soldier beside him, rolled this snowy white scroll up, bringing it back to the cabin in the airship.

Another snowy white scroll, was replaced on the green stone table.

Xinger continue to grind ink with his head lowered. As if his entire spirit was immersed in grinding ink.

Mister Liu fixed his breathing, As his mental state recovered, both his hands again held a brush each. He began to paint yet again.

Ye Qingyu's gaze, fell on Mister Liu body. Observing his bearing as he painted, observing the decisiveness of which his brush moved, observing the naturalness of the brush when it stroked across the scroll, observing line after line of antelope curves appearing on the scroll, this mystery within a mystery feeling.....Without knowing why, Ye Qingyu felt that in his heart something had been moved. This type of mysterious feeling was as if he could comprehend something, but there was still the tiniest shred missing. He could not clearly say what this sensation was, it was like the claws of a cat scratching outside the boot, causing one to go mad.

The other side.

Liu Zongyuan's gaze landed on Ye Qingyu's body. After being

somewhat dumb, he was shocked by what he saw.

He found that Ye Qingyu was like a old monk entering meditation. His entire aura became distanced, giving off a feeling that he was one with nature.

This type of aura, Liu Zongyuan had once seen in the commander class warriors, like the general of Vanguard, Liu Siufeng and a few other top class experts.....

At this time, the expression of Ye Qingyu constantly changed, like an apostle listening to enlightenment, able to hear the essence. The transformation of expressions that occurred in a breath's time on his face, was a sign that he had completely immersed in the way.

“Mister Liu has the title of [Painting saint] in Youyan Pass. Even though he has no martial power, but his drawing techniques, is already near the degree where he can enter the way through painting alone. It is rumoured that whenever Mister Liu paints, the way will arise, that there is a type of returning to a natural state contained within his paintings. Even the War God of Youyan Pass, Lord Lu has sighed with amazement over this. It's a pity that normal people has no way of sensing this aura. Just who is Ye Qingyu, can it be that he able to comprehend the natural law contained within Mister Liu's paintings?”

Liu Zongyuan was extremely shocked.

Right now he had focused his entire attention on Mister Liu painting. He had gained some small benefits, but it was definitely not to such an exaggerated extent like Ye Qingyu.

“This young man is amazing. With time, perhaps he can become the backbone of Youyan Pass and stand at the very apex.”

As he thought of this, Liu Zongyuan brain moved. He suddenly had an idea, that he would try to get closer to Ye Qingyu in the coming days. At least they would be acquainted, and in the future if Ye Qingyu really grew up, then this would absolutely be beneficial to him without any drawbacks whatsoever.

Time flowed by.

“Phew.....”

Mister Liu let out a breath of murky air.

He finally stopped his brush.

The second snowy white scroll, had been finished.

A row of tight and clustered beads of sweat, dripped down from the forehead of Mister Liu.

His spirit was somewhat expended.

The armoured soldier carefully rolled up the scroll for it to be stored away.

The third snowy white scroll very quickly replaced it.

Mister Liu moved a little to stretch. As he was about to paint yet again, he saw Ye Qingyu standing next to him. His expression that looked like fury, looked like anger, like happiness, like sorrow, like craziness, like madness, an expression of having completely forgotten himself. He was completely immersed in a indescribable state. He could not help but hesitate seeing this. Apart from being flabbergasted, he could not help but think of another matter.

Tens of years ago, there had also been a person, that displayed such an expression when he painted, as if he was mad and drunk.....

That person at that time, was similarly young, similarly heroic, similarly glowing with vigour.

It was a pity that person became the greatest traitor in the history of the Empire.

A moment of blankness. It was as if time had turned back for Mister Liu and he had returned to that scene in the past.

Such an event and such a scene, was far too like what had happened in the past.

Boom!

A rumble from the earth suddenly emitted from under the airship.

Everyone on the airship was shocked.

Ye Qingyu also fiercely awakened from the state that he had entered.

“What has happened?”

He looked in confusion at the other people.

Liu Zongyuan quickly came to the edges of the airship, lowering his head to look beneath them.

“The snow dragon is turning.....Everyone be careful, below is a Snow dragon den!” As he looked under, Liu Zongyuan’s expression greatly changed. He gave the order, for the soldiers to be on high alert and prepare for battle.

Every soldier on the armoured plates began to act.

Ye Qingyu also came to the edge of the ship. surveying below him.。

The ice plains below him, suddenly transformed into the undulation of the ocean. A vast quantity of snow and ice layers roiled. One could vaguely see, strands and strands of this leviathan beast thousands of metres long moving below. Slithering through the ice and snow, as if it was a divine dragon swimming through the ocean. Everywhere it passed, the ice layers broke into dust, ice peaks collapsed and the ground

shattered like liquid.....

The body of the gigantic beast was snowy white, with vague dragon scales able to be seen. Seemingly extremely frightening from its outer appearance, it travelled through the ice.

“There really is a den of snow dragons below here? Snow dragons are one of the main races in the battle power of the [Southern incline legion]. This area should be a concealed military post of the demon race.” Mister Liu looked on for a while, a shred of a smile showing on his face: “Good, we finally have some profit. Bring the brush, I need to record this all down.”

Chapter 151 – Fate in the moonlit night

Mister Liu lifted his brush, and began painting yet again on the snowy white scroll with the terrain drawn on it.

After only a few strokes, the strange apparition of the ‘snow dragon turning over’ was replicated in a vivid and lifelike fashion on the map. The silver white coloured snow dragon was as if it was alive and about to pounce out from the painting. Ye Qingyu only gave it a brief glance, but he was able to sense the viciousness and terror of the snow dragon. The body that was thousands of metres long was like a apocalyptic destroyer.

There were many different kinds of beasts in the snow ground demon race. It was said that there were over thousands of known races.

There were specialist institutions which focused on researching the different types of beasts that belonged to the Snow Ground demon race. Through their efforts, they managed to divide the different types of the Snow ground demon race into groups and created books on this subjects. These books were distributed to the army, academies, families, cities and large sects, allowing the citizens of the human race to understand the battle power of the demon race. When it came to battle, they would be fully prepared in case anything happened. Ye Qingyu had once been immersed in the public library of White Deer academy, so naturally he had read books regarding this topic.

The Snow dragons belonged to the middle to upper tier of rankings within the Snow ground demon race.

It was rumoured that the snow dragons was descended from the giant ice dragon in the ancient age. It was a pity that as the God and Devil age ended, the change in yuan qi and the laws of the world, along with the desolate passing of time caused the blood line of the giant ice dragon to become thinner and thinner in the snow dragons. Their power also decreased as a result of this. After hundreds of years, the numbers of snow dragons became less and less. They often spent the majority of their lives underground in ice. As a result their vision deteriorated and they were only able to rely on their touch to sense external objects. Even if they were large in numbers, they could only live underground, leading to the fall of their position among the snow ground demon race.

Today the snow dragon race, showed signs of being chased out from the heart of power in the Snow ground demon court.

But if it was a direct battle, the battle power of every fully grown snow dragon was incomparably terrifying. This type of monster could travel through ice and glaciers like a dragon swimming through the ocean. It's speed was incomparably quick, and they were known as the rulers of ice. The power of its flesh body was incomparably tough. Perhaps they would not prove much use in fighting against top class experts, but they were absolutely the nightmare of ordinary armies. An army of around a thousand people, if they did not have a Bitter sea expert overseeing them would definitely be completely annihilated if they met with a snow dragon.

Ye Qingyu stood on the armoured plates, surveying below.

Snow and fog churned, ice and rock collapsed.

The ice ground below was as if it was collapsing, as if a apocalyptic

earthquake was occurring.

“There are very many demonic beasts like the snow dragon among the thousands of races in the Snow Ground demon race. Everything of the demon race is naturally born with powerful inherent strength. The large majority is not trained and obtained after birth, but is something that they possess inherent. As their ages grow, so too does their strength. This is a very terrifying strength. This is the reason that they have always able to successfully resist against the Snow country with experts after experts emerging.”

Ye Qingyu sighed with emotion in his heart.

The camouflaged formation airship, in a distance not a thousand metres from the ground, slowly sailed through the air.

Miser Liu stood on the armoured plates, unendingly drawing.

After an entire day, he had painted ten snowy white scrolls that completely recorded the terrain and topography hundreds of miles around onto the scrolls.

A day passed by very quickly.

When night descended, the formation airship again ascended higher. Like an invisible spirit, it once again returned to the cloud layers.

Mister Liu had expended far too much of his spirit and mental power. With the support of the student Xinger, he tiredly returned to the cabin.

As he entered in the cabin, he turned around and gave Ye Qingyu a smile, giving him a greeting.

“Officer Ye, the rota tonight will be hard on you.”

Liu Zongyuan came over of his own initiative to say something to Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu was somewhat overwhelmed by the sudden display of attention.

This was the first time that the Warfare officer who was as silent as a rock had spoken to him of his own accord. All the previous night guard duties had been taken care of by the soldiers under his command. Ye Qingyu could clearly sense, that this warfare officer had vague feelings of hostility and exclusion. But without knowing what happened, something made Liu Zongyuan lose all the inexplicable enmity he had previously.

“Fine, rest assured officer Liu.”

Ye Qingyu said seriously.

Liu Zongyuan nodded his head, turning and arranging the other defences of the airship.

After all, he was a military officer that walked step by step to the position he was today through killing and military contributions. After today's interaction, he wanted to get closer with Ye Qingyu but could not let down his face to say some awkward and embarrassing words. To

speaking like this of his own imitative to Ye Qingyu, was already a great allowance.

This type of method where he did not try too hard to get close to him was namely quite suited to Ye Qingyu's personality.

If Liu Zongyuan suddenly became incomparably passionate and warm, then perhaps Ye Qingyu would want to distance himself from him instead.

The formation airship entered into a silent state the entire night. It was hidden within the clouds, and there were not any movements that night.

Ye Qingyu always remained seated on the armoured plates of the ship, observing the movements all around him.

Occasionally he would also sense wave after wave of the will of the martial path fluctuations that came indistinctly far off.

Evidently, in a location far away, the top experts of the demon race and the human race had not yet ended their battle. It was still crazily carrying on.. There were even more experts that had entered into the fray. Ye Qingyu carefully sensed for a while. With his strength, he could sense at least ten different aura of wills of martial path that were dispersed throughout heaven and earth. This represented that there were at least top ten class experts of both parties participating in this battle.

“From what it currently seems like, my previous guess was wrong. The two will of the martial path at the very beginning, was not Lu Zhaoge

and that person. These two core people, has still not acted yet . This time the arrangement of the military of Snow country, the [Gale operation] is very detailed and meticulous. To get rid of that person, they would place the utmost importance on a surprise attack. Otherwise, once that person has recovered his wits, even if he is not their opponent, he can definitely escape. If it is Lu Zhaoge who has acted, he would absolutely not battle for such a long duration of time with that person!”

At this time, Ye Qingyu’s heart already understood the situation.

He stood at the head of the airship, looking towards the south west. There were the indistinct lights of fire flickering in the night sky.

That direction, was the true battlefield at this time.

The long night passed.

The night in the mist and cloud covered air seemed especially peaceful.

Finally midnight had passed.

There were still not any signs of action from all directions.

It seemed like there would be nothing happening this night.

Ye Qingyu sat down in a meditative position. Staring and surveying the night, his thoughts could not help but drift.

Without knowing why, his thoughts once again returned to the strange sensation within his body when he saw Mister Liu painting during the day.

This strange sensation during the day, once again enveloped Ye Qingyu's entire body.

“This feeling.....”

Ye Qingyu concentrated and stilled his thoughts, gradually entering into a peculiar state.

He subconsciously once again began to [Spirit raise].

He had decided for ice to be the attribute of his own inner yuan. At this moment in time, his body was located deep into the Explosive Snow glacier. The sky was cold and the ground was icy, the air around extremely cold. This was namely a great time and place for one to absorb the power of ice. Ye Qingyu once again according to the techniques to [Spirit raise], controlled his entire body by making it relax, allowing every pore to open, He began absorbing the power of ice around the air.

When Ye Qingyu's began absorbing the cold qi, even he himself was not aware, that the air currents above the metal plates of the airship, abruptly and fiercely changed.

“Just what has happened?”

A military officer noticed the sudden convergence of the air streams.

He alertly looked over. Under his observation, in the translucent shine of the moonlit on the armoured plates, like a layer of white frost, there was white glow in the air visible to the naked eye. Like the soft ripples of the ocean wave curving and undulating, like the eye of a whirlpool, these air currents were completely sucked into the silhouette of Ye Qingyu who was sitting there cross-legged like a whale sucking in water.

At this instant, the military officer was completely dumbfounded.

The figure that sat there cross legged under the moonlight, was as peaceful as a statue.。

But he was also like an immortal from legends that absorbed the essence from the sun and moon, heaven and earth. The silver coloured moonlight gathered around his entire body, the cold qi ripples coalescing around him, then completely entering into his body. It caused the military officer to have a sensation of shame of his own inferiority.

Someone lightly tapped the shoulder of this military officer.

The military officer was shocked, then turned his head to see that it was namely Liu Zongyuan that was standing behind him. It was unknown at what time he had arrived.

“Leader, superior Ye, he.....” The military officer was about to say something.

Liu Zongyuan shook his head, his gaze complicated. After remaining

silent for half a while, only then did he say in a low voice. “Don’t disturb patrolling envoy Ye. He has trained to the crucial stage.....Pass the order on, for the brothers to vacate from this area. Also that people should suppress the noises they make, they are not allowed to speak loudly. I will personally handle the night duty.”

“As your orders say.” The military officer said in a small voice, then quickly turned and relayed the orders to the others.

Liu Zongyuan stood where he was. Seeing the figure of Ye Qingyu sat there in a meditative position., his heart could not help but sigh.

“So it has been obtained by him.....”

Some people, some matter, some fate, some opportunity, could not even be envied.

Such was destiny.

For this opportunity, just how long have the young generation of the various factions in Youyan Pass coveted.

But who would known, that ultimately it would be easily obtained by the ‘outsider’ Ye Qingyu that had not even arrived at Youyan Pass for a full month yet.

it was rumoured that the painting techniques of the [Painting saint] Mister Liu was near the ‘way’. His paintings were accepted by Nature, Heaven and Earth. Therefore when he painted, he could stir the natural

laws of heaven and earth, the divine evident in his actions.

After many years of painting, there was a spirit of the natural law that had accumulated on the body of this Painting saint. Because of the fact that he attuned himself to nature, copying the various landscapes of the world, through the accumulation of time he had developed this 'natural way'. This spirit of the natural law did not have much meaning for normal people, but for a martial artist, it was an absolutely fateful encounter. It was said that even the War God of Youyan Pass had personally said, that if there was a martial artist of the younger generation that was able to comprehend thorough observation when the [Painting saint] drew and capture the accumulated spirit of the natural law on the body of the [Painting saint], he would absolutely have a great breakthrough.

But after all these years, he had never heard that one person would comprehend the 'way' through looking at the [Painting saint] draw.

Of course, the reason for this was that there were people that had problems with their ability to comprehend. But another reason for this was that the opportunity for the younger generation to observe the [Painting saint] in action was not many.

Liu Zongyuan himself had bitterly cultivated for many years. His experience in battle was full and great and he had experienced tens of life and death situation. He had thought that he had gained and accumulated enough for he himself to be successful. During the day when Mister Liu painted, he had concentrated and observed with all his power to understand the way, but without too great a harvest. At the end, he could not even be compared to this young person who had understood the 'way' in one session.

This Ye Qingyu was only someone of fifteen Spirit springs. To think that he was able to capture and understand the natural way when the [Painting saint] Mister Liu painted.

Such was the times, such was destiny!

Liu Zongyuan believed, that after this state where he comprehended the ‘way’, Ye Qingyu’s inner yuan would definitely have a transformative breakthrough.

Time passed minute by second.

Liu Zongyuan did not dare tarry. He always remained ten metres away, protecting and guarding Ye Qingyu.

Although he himself was not able to grasp the opportunity to comprehend the way, but why would he not go for the second best option: to bind himself to Ye Qingyu. This young man was able to grasp this fateful chance on the body of the painting saint, he was absolutely not common. Liu Zongyuan could confirm his previous judgement more and more. These years he had killed and risked his life, establishing countless military achievements. But he was powerless because he came from a common background and not visibility. He saw the end to the path of his career. Without a great opportunity or the aid of a person of high rank, it was exceedingly difficult for him to advance another step.

He believed, that Ye Qingyu, was his noble person that would aid him.

This was a gamble.

Even if he lost, he would not lose anything.

Therefore like so, Liu Zongyuan remained guarding Ye Qingyu until the morning

As the first ray of sunlight shot through the cloud layers, it shined on Ye Qingyu's body. At that time, he finally opened his eyes.

Chapter 152 – Return journey

Ye Qingyu welcomed the morning sun, unhurriedly getting up.

At that instant, Liu Zongyuan utterly concentrated as he stared at Ye Qingyu. On Liu Zongyuan's face, there was a questioning expression. Ye Qingyu's energy fluctuation did not show any signs of increasing explosively, and there was not any special aura around his body. There seemed to be no change whatsoever after the essence of the moon and the cold qi vortex had entered into his body.....

Could it be that his guess was wrong?

Ye Qingyu did not obtain the natural way from the [Painting saint] Mister Liu?

Liu Zongyuan felt greatly surprised.

At that time, he saw Ye Qingyu slowly extending his palm flatly outwards.

A pale silver white mist like a burning scorching flame, as if it was a spirit that was filled with vitality, slowly rose from his palm.

Liu Zongyuan eyes jumped.

This was.....

Ice attribute yuan qi?

Even this warfare officer who had a wealth of experience, was tongue tied by this scene.

At that same time, a pressuring cold will spread out with Ye Qingyu at the centre.

Ka-cha. Ka-cha.

There was the sounds of something brittle cracking.

As expected, the next instant, the white mist that was like a flame above Ye Qingyu's palm, suddenly consolidated. It transformed into solid silver ice, translucent and pure, as if it was ice sculpture, or as if it was a flame that had been frozen. Under the shine of the sun, it flickered with a strange radiance.

Ye Qingyu looked down to see the ice in his hand. A smile appeared on his face.

As his heart willed, this cold ice quickly dispersed, becoming white mist yet again. It constantly transformed through different states, sometimes solid, sometimes gas, changing as he willed.

A seeping cold spread out towards all direction, but Ye Qingyu himself could not sense the slightest hint of cold. He could only feel that his

inner yuan was flowing at an incomparably smooth rate, his entire person feeling a comfortableness he had never experienced before.

The [Spirit raise] was successful!

Apart from being excited, Ye Qingyu was also somewhat confused.

He had never thought that through his unconscious attempts, he would succeed. Originally he only wanted to adjust to the sensation of the cold entering his body, and successfully create a foundation for him to [Spirit raise] at the twenty spirit springs stage. But who would have guessed, he would accidentally complete the [Spirit raise] prior to this.

His luck was far too good.

Was it not said, that before twenty Spirit springs, one could not [Spirit raise]?

Ye Qingyu suddenly thought of himself yesterday night. Before entering that state, his body unconsciously entered into the peculiar state he had when he observed Miser Liu painting.....could it be that the reason he was able to pre-emptively finish the [Spirit raise] had something to do with this state? If such was so, could it be that this Mister Liu had accidentally aided him?

Behind his back.

The shock in Liu Zongyuan's heart, was hard to describe using words.

Fourteen years old!

Fifteen spirit springs!

At such a age, with such a cultivation state, that he would so easily succeed in the [Spirit raise]!

Even the [War God of Youyan Pass] Youyan Pass, when he was fourteen years old, most likely could not complete the [Spirit raise] prior to twenty Spirit springs?

Liu Zongyuan originally thought, that the natural way obtained from the [Painting saint] Mister Liu could refine Ye Qingyu's mental state, allowing his spirit to be full and with no imperfections. It was something that would have long term great benefits for his cultivation. But he had not imagined that the effects were far more incredible than what he had originally estimated. Very many famous experts only began to Spirit raise when they were of the twenty Spirit spring stage. If they were unlucky, they even need tens year of time to succeed in the [Spirit raise] and to step past this door of the martial path. These people when compared to Ye Qingyu, would most likely die of embarrassment.

As he was thinking, a light sound came. The door of the cabin was opened.

The Mister Liu who had rested for a whole night had recovered his vitality. He walked out from within the cabin.

“The weather is not bad. I have an idea, why don’t we continue heading North. How about it?” Mister Liu greeted Ye Qingyu and Liu Zongyuan with a smile.

Liu Zongyuan heard this, his eyebrows forming a frown. “Mister, if we keep heading North, then this is somewhat a lone army penetrating too deep into enemy territory. We will have nearly gone outside the radius of the Explosive snow glacier, and truly entered into the territory of the Snow ground demon court in the North. It will be even more dangerous Mister your status is valuable, if there is any danger.....”

Miser Liu shook his head. “There is no need to fear. I received news from the army last night. The front lines, is about to succeed. The [Southern incline legion] at the Explosive Snow glacier, is already completely in a mess. At this time, it is namely a good opportunity to fish in trouble waters¹. The opportunity is transient,we cannot miss it. For the Empire,so what if I place myself in danger.”

As he said this, he looked at Liu Zongyuan, then looked at Ye Qingyu: “What do you say?”

“The front lines is about to succeed. Does that mean, that person has already fallen into the trap?” Liu Zongyuan’s mental state was shaken, turning his head to look at the soldiers behind him. Biting his teeth, he said in determination “When I departed, the military order I received was to follow blindly behind Mister Liu. Since Mister wants to continue on deep into the territory, then me and the soldiers, will absolutely pledge our lives and follow. Even if our body is torn and our bones are crushed, we will protect the safety of Mister.”

At this moment, on the officer who had experienced hundreds of

battles, there was a lofty majestic quality emerging that was similarly seen on the army of the empire that pressed forward courageously.

At this moment it was as if Ye Qingyu could again see the sentries that were sleeping under the ice and snow of the hundred broken mountains.

Different roles, different positions, but similarly heroic.

This was the army of the Empire.

At that instant, emotions surged in Ye Qingyu's chest. His blood was hot, as if a flame was burning within his chest. Nodding his head: "Since it is so, then I am also willing to follow along Mister Liu and Officer Liu and take this risk."

Mister Liu began laughing loudly.

Liu Zongyuan glanced at Ye Qingyu once, then nodded his head slightly.

He originally wanted to find an excuse for Ye Qingyu to return in advance. He was able to realise, that Ye Qingyu would perhaps be very important for the future of Youyan Pass. But since Ye Qingyu had fervently opened his mouth, it would be embarrassing and awkward for him to say anything.

"I hope that this time, we do not encounter any danger."

No matter whether it was Mister Liu or Ye Qingyu, they were exceedingly important people in the heart of Liu Zongyuan. If there was any loss, he would not know how to explain himself.

.....

A day of time passed by.

The formation airship carefully soared through the air in the demon territory. Thankfully they did not encounter any danger.

Mister Liu continued on drawing another four or five scrolls. He completely recorded down the terrain and topography of the areas the formation airship passed. They discovered a very concealed stronghold of the military of the demon race, as well as the military bases of the major races that fought for the demon race. The harvest was very great. If these scrolls were handed back into Youyan Pass, then the understanding of the [Army of Youyan] towards the Explosive snow glacier as well as the Northern plains of the North demon race would enter into a new era of history.

Everyone on the formation air ship began to be excited.

With the success of this mission, this absolutely could be counted as a great contribution towards the war effort. Everyone that returned would definitely be heavily rewarded and this would become one of the qualifications for their future promotion to an higher position.

In the blink of an eye, another day passed.

The formation airship had already passed by the Explosive Snow glacier, arriving at the Origin ice region.

Mister Liu had also become far more cautious, ordering for the formation airship to sail even higher. If there was any hint of any trouble, he would immediately order for silence and for them to hide. He was not as daring as he was before. There were several times they encountered the flying demon races, but thankfully they detected them early and could avoid them pre-emptively. They did not encounter with any trouble.

At this time, the formation airship, was completely akin to walking on a steel wire. It was extremely dangerous and risky. dangerous as walking on a steel wire.

Such a lone group venturing deep alone, once they were discovered, would instantly be surrounded by vast quantities of demon race army. At that time, it would be a apocalyptic disaster.

That night.

“Tomorrow morning, we will turn around and go back.” Mister Liu made his decision.

In Liu Zongyuan’s heart, a stone was lifted.

If they did not continue to go on deeply, then they should not encounter any danger.

The speed of the formation airship was extremely quick. If they used their full power for flight, and did not delay anymore to draw maps, they only needed approximately a day of time to once again enter the area that the [Army of Youyan Pass] controlled. At that time, they would be safe.

That night it was completely silent.

There were nothing that happened that was out of expectations.

The next day, the formation airship turned around and returned.

The airship directly rose to high, high up in the air. if it was like this, they could evade the majority of the flying battle divisions of the demon race and they would also not disturb the demon race on the ground. They could use their fastest speed to fly.

Half a day passed.

It was exceedingly safe throughout the journey.

When the sun was in the noon position, the formation airship had already passed halfway through the Explosive Snow glacier heading south.

On the armoured plates, the soldiers had already relaxed from their serious and careful manner.

On the face of Liu Zongyuan, there was the beginnings of a smile.

The vast majority of time, Ye Qingyu stood at the head of the ship, practicing controlling his cold qi yuan qi.

That night he had mysteriously broken through and managed to succeed in the [Spirit raise] in advance. Within his inner yuan, there were a great quantity of ice and snow qi. When this left his body through the activation of his inner yuan, it could instantly transform into ice that froze his opponent ——although this was normal ice, with no way to freeze high class opponents, but its power was already not low.

Big Head had also completely awakened.

The majority of time, he lay on Ye Qingyu's shoulder, lazily basking in the sun.

After this time of 'hibernation', there seemed to be some sort of transformation that had occurred on the body of this glutton. It did not eat anymore; even if the tastiest food was placed in front of him, this fellow would not even give it a glance. Ye Qingyu maliciously conjectured, that it was possible that this fellow had eaten far too much, so he was having indigestion.

“Half a day more, then we will have returned.”

Ye Qingyu also became much more relaxed.

He was about to rest for a while, when at that time, an unexpected change happened——

The originally lazy Big Head that was lying on Ye Qingyu's shoulders suddenly reacted. His ears suddenly perked up, fiercely lifting his head and looking towards somewhere far off.

“What is it?” Ye Qingyu sensed this abnormal changed.

Ceng!

Big Head suddenly stood up, staring fixedly at somewhere far off. All the white hair on his body suddenly stood up.

This time, Ye Qingyu could sense that something was not right.

He followed Big Head's gaze and looked at the distance.

But in front of them was a white cloud sea, without any abnormalities whatsoever.

“Wuwu.....wuwu.....” There was a low growl emitting from Big Head's throat. His large eyes were filled with caution and hostility. He stared fixedly in front of him, the muscles on his body hardening.

In Ye Qingyu's heart, there was a sense of misfortune rising.

Big Head had never been in such a state before. Before, even when they were attacked by the dragon ape, such an expression had not appeared. Even when they were chased by the [Pill king of Azure Phoenix], he would have a lazy and uncaring expression.....

Ye Qingyu stood up, looking in front of the formation airship.

The sea of cloud billowed, the waves as if it was angry.

Under the sun, above the cloud layer, everything was peaceful.

But in such a peaceful of atmosphere, the white mass of clouds erected in front of the were like a huge mountain range that rose steeply from the ground, blocking the path of the formation airship. Such a mountain range peak like clouds, had already appeared many times before on their route. These were just mist and cloud, they could just pass through without affecting the formation airship in the slightest. The formation airship had even utilised such masses of clouds previously to evade the patrols of the demon race.

Everything seemed normal on the formation airship. They approached the huge mass of cloud at high speed.

Ye Qingyu's heart began drumming madly.

His countenance quickly changed: "Stop, quickly stop!"

1. profit from chaos ↵

Chapter 153 – Snow ground boar bat

“What is it?”

Liu Zongyuan came over with an anxious expression.

Ye Qingyu pointed towards the gigantic mass of clouds. “I feel something is not right at that place.”

Liu Zongyuan followed along to where Ye Qingyu was pointed. His originally anxious expression, evidently relaxed somewhat. “Oh, you’re referring to that. Don’t worry, I’ve already extended my senses inside, there’s nothing there.....ahah, on the way, we have already traversed many masses of such clouds. Officer Ye, perhaps you’re mental state is too nervous right now. Relax a little. Only half a day more, and we can return to the territory of Youyan pass.....”

Ye Qingyu shook his head.

Right now, it was not only simply because of Big Head’s actions that made him suspicious. He truly and utterly felt unrest born in his heart.

The closer they neared the mass of clouds, the more unrest he felt.

“That’s not right. Officer Liu, I can sense, there is something hidden within the clouds. Officer Liu, order for the airship to quickly halt and for us to reverse at any moment. We must not enter into that mass of clouds.” Ye Qingyu’s voice became more and more determined.

Liu Zongyuan looked at Ye Qingyu's expression, then carefully thought it over. He issued the order, for the formation airship to temporarily stop.

At that time, the distance they were away from the gigantic mass of clouds, was only a hundred metres.

“People, prepare the shooting star armour arrows. Let us probe the clouds.” Liu Zongyuan ordered the soldiers to arch their bows, and shoot towards the mass of clouds.

On the formation airship, there were formation metal yuan qi cannons prepared. The power was extremely great, but after shooting, there would evident yuan qi fluctuations spreading throughout the air. It was very easy for it to attract the attention of the demon race. Therefore unless it was at a crucial moment, they would not utilise it. At this moment, using bows were better.

These soldiers were martial artists of the Spirit spring stage and there bows were the shooting star armour arrows. The power was extremely great.

Xiu!Xiu!Xiu!

The bowstrings trembled, and the shooting stars armour arrows were like a torrential rainstorm, shooting into the mass of clouds.

But the clouds were silent, without any reaction. There was not even the slightest turbulent air current caused.

“Shoot again!”

Liu Zongyuan issued another order.

Xiu!Xiu!Xiu!

It was another wave of arrow rain.

The shooting star armour arrow once again entered into the clouds in a tight and clustered fashion.

The clouds still did not have any movements or fluctuations whatsoever.

Liu Zongyuan ordered for the arrows to be shot once again.

The result was the same.

After three waves of shooting, Liu Zongyuan looked towards Ye Qingyu and smiled faintly: “It seems there is not any problems. Officer Ye is far too anxious.....” In truth, the cost to create the shooting star armour arrows were high and only shooting one round was enough to test out potential dangers. The reason Liu Zongyuan ordered the soldiers to shoot three waves of arrows was because his personality was cautious and careful. However, another reason was that he wished to give some face to Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu shook his head.

His heart willed, and under the activation of his yuan qi, a silver mist rapidly appeared in the centre of his palm.

This white ice mist was as if it had a life of its own. In Ye Qingyu's hands, it constantly grew longer, finally solidifying into the shape of a long spear. When the mist dispersed, a ice spear appeared in reality in Ye Qingyu's palm. With an ancient design, the body of the spear was about a pebbles thickness. It was a diluted pale green blue colour, and under the sunlight, it flickered with a translucent jade like radiance.

Ye Qingyu lifted his hand.

The long spear sailed outwards.

[Banner of Heaven and Earth of the four moves of the golden armoured king].

The ice spear instantly disappeared, then descended from the heavens, nailing down onto the mass of clouds.

“Ao.....”

A desperate howl emitted from the mass of clouds.

Demonic qi roiled.

The colour of Liu Zongyuan's face greatly changed.

The soldiers on the armoured plates, also sensed that something was not right.

Without needing for Liu Zongyuan's orders, their blades and swords were unsheathed. Everyone activated their body, moving and positioning themselves in defensive formation.

The next moment, a rich and dense demonic qi hurricane exploded from within the cloud layer. Like a huge gale, it blew and dispersed apart the huge white clouds.

They could see behind the clouds, there was a large swathe of black flying demonic beasts that completely covered the sky. Their outer appearance were like bats, with wild boar like heads and fangs. Their bodies were pale silver, and their wings were like old leather, bringing with it sharp bone hooks. They had a pair of forelimbs and hind legs, and their pitch black claws were sharp like blades.....

Such a crowd of demonic beasts, had beat their wings without sound, hiding within the mass of clouds.

Within this colony, was a boar bat that was five or six metres tall. On its back, there was a ice spear that was stabbed into its body. There were black demonic blood dripping from the injury. At this moment it was crazily struggling, a tragic howl emitting from its mouth.

“It's the [Snow ground Boar bats]!

There were soldiers that loudly shouted.

[Snow ground Boar bat] was one of the branches of the snow ground demon race battalions. They were similar to Snow dragon in that their vision had also deteriorated seriously, not able to see objects. But they had the strange power to use sound waves to confirm the position of their foes. At the same time, they specialised in concealment; when they were in a silent state, they could completely conceal the demon qi from their entire body, with nothing leaking out. No wonder someone like Liu Zongyuan could not sense the existence of this crowd of Boar bats.

This type of demon race would normally travel in a group.

They had a sharp like blade bone hook wings. and also talons that could slice apart steel armour. The sounds that emitted from their mouth could hurt someone without shape or form. In the air, they were a demon race that were hard to deal with.

Normally, the [Snow ground boar bat] held the role of a scout in the army of the demon race.

The instant they saw the [Snow ground boar bat], Liu Zongyuan's facial colour changed.

“Prepare to meet the enemy.” Liu Zongyuan unsheathed the long blade at his waist. He shouted: “Increase the speed of the airship, rush past it.”

This experienced officer, in the first instant, made the most correct decision.

Once the air ship was discovered, once they were exposed, then they were in absolute danger.

At this time, they could not fight a dragged out battle. They needed to rush out from the Explosive snow glacier. Once they arrived at the area controlled by the army [Youyan Pass army], then they were safe.

On the armour plates, there were the creaking sounds of the bows. All forty of the shooting star armour bows was drawn to a full crescent state in an instant.

And the twenty metal yuan qi cannons on the edges of the airship, also began storing energy. The scarlet red formation lines on the cannons were filled with energy, emitting a blood red colour. Under the cannon uniformed soldiers' control, the mouth of the twenty cannons rotated and aimed towards the [Snow ground boar bat] battalion a hundred metres away.

At the same time.

The body of the formation airship began lightly shuddering.

The heart of the airship began vibrating and humming with a peculiar noise. At the same time, the carved formation array on the body of the airship was activated, rapidly flickering with light. The heart of the formation activation noise, was like the loud roar emitted from a slumbering gigantic beast.

Xiu!

The formation airship shuddered, tearing apart through the air. Like an arrow released from a bow, it headed straight towards the [Snow ground board bats] to rush past them.

“Release!”

The loud shout of Liu Zongyuan seemed to occur at the same exact instant.

Then there were the shooting star armour arrows that covered the sky being released.

The formation metal yuan qi cannons glinted with a scarlet red light pillar, bringing with it a destructive aura. Then like a meteor shooting through the sky, it instantly exploded into the crowd of the [Snow ground boar bats].

Boom!

Blood shot everywhere, white bones were crushed.

The battle began in an instant.

The formation airship had the protection of the formation forcefield. For a short period of time, the [Snow ground boar bats] had no way of attacking them.

By travelling at such a rapid speed, there were tens of [Snow ground boar bats] unable to evade in time. They were crushed into meat paste by the formation airship.

Ping!Ping!Ping!

There were constantly [Snow ground boar bats] that charged over, striking on the external energy field. They rebounded off it, blood dripping and their bodies broken.

Such a type of demonic beast did not fear death. Under their mad charge, the protection field of the formation airship rapidly became thinner and thinner.

This division of [Snow ground boar bat] had already lost twenty to thirty percent of its number through the charge of the formation airship. Originally they had hid within the clouds, they wanted to kill the human race airship before they could react. They had never thought they would be discovered prematurely, and then was struck so quickly that they could not react by the human race formation airship. In an instant, the air was covered with bloody wind and rain. All those that had died as of this moment, were the [Snow ground boar bats].

“Charge, charge past!”

Liu Zongyuan lifted his curved blade, roaring loudly to keep up morale.

His body was as straight as a spear, his muscular body towering like a

mountain. Facing the [Snow ground boar bats], he did not even retreat a step. His manner was enough to give someone confidence and make them rely on him. This type of sensation was hard to describe using words alone. Standing alone at the head of the ship, the silver cape fluttering madly, it was as if he was a deity of war.

At this moment, the warfare officer of the Vanguard camp, the star of the army, finally displayed his true colours.

If it was the normally silent Liu Zongyuan, then it seemed liked he was an unnoticeable boulder. The Liu Zongyuan at this moment, was like a diamond that had lost the moss on its surface. In an instant, he exploded with a fascinating lustre, giving a shine that made someone not dare to regard directly.

Under his command, the soldiers methodically returned fire, charging, shooting down the boar bats.

Twenty breaths later, the formation protection field of the airship had finally broken.

The mad boar bats, like flies that could enter through every hole, landed on the metal plates

These demonic beasts had a large body. The smallest had a wingspan of two or three metres. The moment they landed on the armoured plates and as they flapped their bone hook wings, the formation airship shuddered. On the armoured plates there were hole after hole that appeared. In an instant, there were seven or eight boar bats that landed on the armoured plates, madly destroying and causing chaos.

“Throw these beasts off!”

With a long blade in Liu Zongyuan's hand, he commanded from the head of the ship.

As the commander, he must listen and observe everything. Unless it was at an crucial time, he could not participate in the battle.

From within the crowd of boar bats madly charging, there were two figures that exceeded eight metres. Their whole bodies was a violet black colour. They were a class of demon warrior, the boar bat king. Liu Zongyuan must preserve his strength; once the boar bat kings descended on the ship, he must personally fight against them.

At this time, Ye Qingyu knew, that his time to act had come.

His heart willed.

Another ice spear coalesced in his hands.

Ever since successfully [Spirit raising], in these days, he had constantly practiced. The control and handling of his ice inner yuan had already reached a state where he was extremely familiar with it. Forming ice into weapon, making his ice inner yuan become his weapon was not a difficult task for him anymore.

Xiu!

The ice spear once again descended.

The Banner of Heaven and Earth of the golden armoured king was once again used.

Chapter 154 – White Horse battle armour

The instant the sound waves sounded——

Ding!

The ice spear had already nailed a live boar bat onto the metal plates.

At the same time, not giving time for the other boar bats to resist, another ice spear successfully solidified in Ye Qingyu's hands.

He shouted loudly, the long spear stabbing out continuously.

The fierce dragon pierce of the four moves of the golden armoured king.

There was the faint pulse of dragon roars and a strange pressure was released. The originally madly violent boar bats, unexpectedly screeched, their voice crammed with fear.

The formidable power of the chain techniques broke out.

Ye Qingyu transformed into a bolt of lighting, his figure like an avalanche. He headed towards the four or five [Snow ground boar bats] on the metal plate, charging at them.

Boom!

Ye Qingyu using his own flesh and blood body, directly struck a four metre tall boar bat head on.

The demon race typically had strong and tough close combat attributes, and the boar bats were not an exception. Their wings were made from skeleton and skin, comparable to steel, and their body was also like cast iron. They enjoying a toughness that was blessed by heavens.

If an expert of the same level did not have a sharp weapon, it was very difficult for them to break past the natural defences of the boar bats. But the skeleton of this huge boar bat, after being struck by Ye Qingyu's body was like porcelain meeting a metal hammer. Instantly bones cracked and shattered, and the skeleton on its wings had nearly completely broken apart!

“Aoo.....”

This boar bat let out a tragic howl.

The massive figure was struck sailing backwards, like a thrown steel ball. It madly and fiercely struck two of its comrades.

The scene was far too violent. Fresh blood flew everywhere, and accompanying the tragic howls, three boar bats were sent flying on the armour plates. Their massive and broken bodies flew through the air and rapidly descended down to the ground below.

Because their wings had been crushed and broken, they had no way of

flying anymore. They were only able to fall to their deaths.

The power of that one strike, was as fierce as a lion.

The soldiers that were originally fighting with others boar bats, was dumbfounded as they witnessed this scene.

Just what was this type of power?

The body of patrolling envoy Ye, could it be cast from iron?

To unexpectedly use his body to slam directly at the demonic beasts. For other human experts, such a method of doing battle had no difference from committing suicide. It was common knowledge that the body of demons were much more tough and hardy than humans.....but despite this, patrolling envoy Ye was able to win, and that boar bat, his body was crushed and his bones were shattered like porcelain!

Berserk !

Tyrannical!

Barbaric !

Direct !

This was a violent battle method that completely shook someone's

nerves.

Every soldier, felt the fire in their hearts being lit by this strike.

“Good!”

“Superior is powerful!”

“Superior Ye is too amazing!”

There were several soldiers that immediately began shouting in triumph. Their gazes were filled with acceptance and respect when they looked at Ye Qingyu.

On the battlefield, only true power, bravery, and accomplishments could obtain the true admiration of others.

Previously, Ye Qingyu had remained silent for the majority of the time on the airship. He had taken no action at all. The impressions of the soldiers regarding Ye Qingyu was that he was only ‘a youth that accomplished the position of patrolling sword envoy’ this tag. It was only because of his military position that they showed respect on the surface for him. But at this moment, everyone instantly understood, the true power of patrolling envoy Ye.

This time by acting out, Ye Qingyu had given a great morale boost.

“Brothers, let act and fight together!”

Ye Qingyu laughed uproariously. Reaching through the air, he summoned the [Little Shang sword]. Like a mighty lion or a fierce tiger, his aura exploded. Taking large strides towards the fourth [Snow ground boar bat], the blade of the sword flickered with a golden light. [Soul stealing strike] of the four moves of the unmatched general, was about to erupt after accumulating energy.

“We are willing to fight shoulder to shoulder with patrolling envoy Ye!”

“Kill them!”

The soldiers also became excited, roaring in rage as they did battle, the morale having risen greatly.

“Ao!”

The fourth [Snow ground boar bat's] body was even larger than the others. It was nearly the size of a boar bat king. Screeching loudly, it struck a soldier flying, and turned his head, charging towards Ye Qingyu.

The demon race also had intelligence. For a demon race like the [Snow ground boat bat], by seeing with their own eyes three of their comrades being killed, they instantly knew that this human was not someone they should provoke. But this boar bat still maintained the stance that its demonic power was stronger than his human. It decided to fight directly against and finish off this somewhat troublesome human.

Ye Qingyu welcomed him, without the slightest of fear.

“Soul Stealing Heaven strike!”

The killing technique instantly emitted.

Everyone only felt their visions blurring. Then Ye Qingyu’s sword move was already upon the wing of the [Snow ground boar bat].

A slicing sound.

A large half of the skeleton wing was cut apart.

On the wound there was a layer of frost that appeared. It sealed off the sword wound. Before the demonic blood could spurt out, it was instantly frozen.

“Storm of swords!”

After his initial strike proved effective, Ye Qingyu did not hesitate in the slightest. The four moves of the unmatched general once again exploded.

The storm of swords that spread out through the skies swept everywhere.

Within this storm of swords, there were also frost and snow qi contained within. Ye Qingyu’s attribute of cold inner yuan also displayed a frightening killing power at this instant. The [Snow ground boar bats] reactions and movements had evidently been affected by the cold and

snow, their movements off by half a beat. In this instant, it was unknown just how many times they had been struck, one after another of white frost wounds constantly appearing.....

The figures intersected.

Ye Qingyu appeared behind the boar bat, stowing his sword and standing.

The huge boar bat, had already stopped struggling at this moment. The tight and clustered sword wounds had been completely frozen by ice all around his body. Everywhere on his body, there was a thin ice layer, looking incomparable tragic.....It could even be said, that his massive body was frozen in ice.

Ye Qingyu turned around, kicking out.

Boom!

This huge boar bat was directly sent flying away from the armoured plates.

Another one had been taken care of.

On the metal plates, there were only the last two boar bats left.

Even if its nature was fierce and tough, but after seeing its comrades consecutively slaughtered like chopping up vegetables, these two boar

bats also sensed that things was not going well. They did not dare stay on the metal plates anymore. Flapping its wings, they escaped towards the air.

“You want to escape?”

Ye Qingyu loudly roared. Activating the [White Horse battle armour], the pegasus wings behind his back spread out.

His figure moved, turning into a ray of light that chased after and killed the two [Snow ground boar bats] in the air.

“Patrolling envoy Ye, quickly return.” Liu Zongyuan shouted loudly.

Ye Qingyu observed the flying speed of the [Snow ground boar bat]. He had already thought things through in his heart. The pegasus wings were extremely nimble and comfortable, his entire body floating through the air. Replying: “Officer Liu, bring the ship and leave first. I’ll stay here to block them for a moment. As long as we extend the distance, we will be safe. At this time, we must not fight a drawn out battle.”

“No, this is far too dangerous.” Liu Zongyuan said in a panic.

Ye Qingyu laughed loudly. “Don’t worry, I have my plans.””

As he said this, he turned around and flew to meet the flock of [Snow ground boar bats].

Liu Zongyuan was in a panic. He ordered the soldiers under his command to activate the full power of the formation airship and charge forward. Like a bolt of lightning that swept across space, he himself flew through the air. Behind his back a pair of black wings extended, seeming to be the same as the [White Horse battle armour]. It was also a cast metal item formation, extremely nimble and agile. In an instant he came beside Ye Qingyu saying: "I'll delay them along with you. But we must not fight an extended battle. Once we are entangled for long with these beasts, then we will be in danger."

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

As they spoke, Liu Zongyuan had took out the blade sheath at his waist, inserting it onto the hilt of his blade.

A curved blade, instantly turned into a long executioners blade.

"Kill!"

He struck through air using his blade.

A huge blade with pale golden sword light struck out.

In the air, there was instantly a sharp killing qi.

The three or four [Snow ground boar bats] at the very front was instantly crushed into pieces, black coloured blood flying everywhere.

“So Liu Zongyuan [Spirit raise] belongs to the metal attribute. Of the five element, metal is the one with the strongest killing aura, and also the attribute with the greatest offensive power. Those who cultivated in metal inner yuan, specialises in killing strikes and baleful aura. Liu Zongyuan came from the army, and he is similar to the large majority of soldiers. He likes the attribute with the greatest offensive power.....”

Ye Qingyu evaluated in his heart.

He controlled the [White Horse armour], his entire body fluctuating with white light. As the White Horse wings shuddered, his entire person transformed into a ray of light, shooting through the large pack of [Snow ground boar bats]. The Little Shang sword exploded with sharp slice after sharp slice, constantly killing.

With the [White Horse battle armour], the amount of inner yuan expended flying through the air was so little that it did not even have to be considered. Ye Qingyu's will to battle shot through the roof. He had an unprecedented carefree and unrestrained feeling.

This type of refinement and training through battle, not only had a great beneficial effect Ye Qingyu's true battle power, but even for the control of the [White Horse armour]. He became more and more familiar with it. The flow of inner yuan in the formation of the battle armour became faster and faster, smoother and smoother. The brightness emitted from the armour also became hotter, as if Ye Qingyu was a great battle god of the sun.

“A extremely powerful battle armour. These white horse wings, not only can it be used to fly, it can also be used as a weapon, to slice apart the enemy.”

Ye Qingyu continued to fly like lightning, his wings like blades. He cut the two [Snow ground boar bats] beside him into four pieces.

“Eh? The helmet of the armour, seems like it have some sort of secret.” Ye Qingyu discovered by accident, that within the white helmet, there was another hidden formation.

After inserting his inner yuan into the helmet, the originally white helmet became to shake, and a pale silver like liquid began seeping out. It covered Ye Qingyu’s face, but completely did not block his vision or his senses of the external world. It could even strengthen Ye Qingyu’s vision, raising his reaction speed and sensitivity. This was an extremely peculiar sensation. Ye Qingyu discovered, that after the change in the helmet occurred, he could ‘see’ even more clearly.

Was this the true secret of the [White horse armour]?

Ye Qingyu was both shocked and overjoyed.

No wonder this armour was the historical armour of all the masters of [White Horse tower].

After he discovered the secret of the White Horse helmet, Ye Qingyu became more and more like a fish in water.

On the other side, Liu Zongyuan’s strike was extremely vicious. Every blade that he struck with, there would be [Snow ground boar bats] shattering.

Liu Zongyuan blade techniques, had extremely heavy killing aura and an unrelenting baleful momentum.

After battling for eight minutes, they had at least killed two hundred or more of [Snow ground boar bats]. Even the boar bat king within this group was heavily injured by Liu Zongyuan. The momentum of this flying demon race battalion was very seriously injured. They were not as mad as it was previously. There were signs of chaos, and they showed signs of fleeing.....

“Let’s go!”

Liu Zongyuan turned around, heading and chasing towards the direction in which the formation airship disappeared.

Ye Qingyu followed behind him.

For two people to completely kill off this battalion of [Snow ground boar bats] was something that could not be done. They only needed to delay them for a bit, to give a bit of time to the formation airship for it to quickly depart.

After a short while.

The two once again returned to the formation airship.

Tallying the numbers. four soldiers of the vanguard had died in battle

and twenty had been injured after the battle. The losses of an acceptable range.

Chapter 155 – Demon race battleship

After temporarily breaking away from the entanglement of the [Snow ground boar bats], the formation airship used the quickest speed to flee through the skies like an arrow leaving the bow.

The countenance of everyone on the metal plates were extremely grave.

Everyone was clear in their hearts, that once they were discovered by the demon race, this represented the descent of a huge disaster.

A battalion of [Snow ground boar bats] was not frightening. If they faced them directly, within just approximately two hours, they could completely annihilate them. But after the route of formation airship was exposed, what faced them was the mad hunt and encirclement of the demon race. There would be other battalions of demon races coming to kill them at any time. The numbers were so many that they could not kill them all, and they had no where at all to hide. Even if there was a Bitter Sea stage expert here to oversee things, they would be completely exhausted down to their death by the countless demon races.

Right now, the only way out, was before the experts and the other flying battalions of the demon race could react, leave the controlled territory of the snow ground demon court using the quickest speed.

The speed of the formation airship was extremely rapid.

But in the heart of Liu Zongyuan and Ye Qingyu, they were not calm at all.

The demon race was born and raised in such a harsh environment. They had a hunting and tracking power that humans could hardly imagine.

Right now they could only hope that the [Snow ground boar bats] would not be able to pass on the knowledge of their existence at the first instance. They could only hope this would be so since the demon race on the Explosive Snow glacier had completely fallen into chaos.

“Use full power to run the airship. Prepare to use the Origin crystal and the second flying formation.....”

Liu Zongyuan settled down, and order after order was passed down from his mouth.

At this time, the existence of an experienced commander demonstrated its importance.

The speed of the airship increased by a considerable amount.

Accompanied by the sharp whistle of air breaking apart, the formation airship broke a huge rough fissure through the roiling sea of clouds like a streak of lightning. It was as if the skies had been sliced apart.

At this time, they could not care about such an unrestrained mad increase in speed and whether this would or would not alert the demon race.

Whether they had a chance to live, all depended on the fraction of a second.

If they were able to rush out of the Explosive Snow glacier, and leave the demon race territory before the [Snow ground boat bats] battalion could convey the information of their presence to the higher ups of the demon race, then everyone on the ship could live on. If not, their chances of living on was thin.

Fast!

Faster!

Even Faster!

The faster they were, the greater their chance of living.

On the airship cabin, the formation master was already sweating. He used all his strength, to control the centre of the flying formation.

On the metal plates, the soldiers were graves. They stood still and quiet in formation, blades and spears unsheathed, prepared to meet battle at any moment.

The [Painting saint] and the student Xinger, stood at the cabin door. Their expressions were also abnormally grave.

Big Head lay on Ye Qingyu's shoulders, his nose occasionally sniffing at

the White Horse helmet. He seemed to be extremely interested in the white horse helmet, and would occasionally extend his pink tongue and give it a little lick, leaving saliva on it. Ye Qingyu could only grab the neck of this glutton, and forcefully stuff him back into his chest.....

Ye Qingyu carefully observed the reaction of this silly dog.

Through his previous experience, this glutton should possess an extremely strong sensing ability. His ability exceeded the investigative power of the formation on the airship as well as the senses of an expert like Liu Zongyuan. He was able to discover in advance the traces of the battalions of the demon race.

Very quickly, fifteen minutes passed by.

Everything seemed to be calm on the surface.

“Another fifteen minutes of time, and we will have neared the snow dragon den.” On the face of Liu Zongyuan, a trace of relaxation was seen. “Out of the many battle divisions of the demon race, the snow dragon is the one with the strongest territorial nature. It will absolutely not allow the other battalions of the demon race to enter into their territory — especially within their den. And the snow dragon cannot fly, so it has no way of posing any sort of threat to us. This is our great chance. As long as we pass through the snow dragon den, and increase the speed of the formation airship, using our full power to travel, we can escape. After another fifteen minutes pass this place, we can enter the territory where both parties are exchanging blow, and there we can find reinforcements!”

The words that he spoke was very loud.

The contents of his speech, clearly travelled to the ears of everyone.

The originally somewhat nervous soldiers, let out a breath. Their original expressions of despair turned to hopeful expressions, light in their eyes.

As long as they had hope, the human race could explode with a shocking power at any moment, withstanding the situation.

[Painting saint] Mister Liu let out a faint smile. He followed along and said: “Through some emergency channels, I have also sent the request of aid out. As long as we withstand another hour, we can receive the support of the great army of Youyan Pass. At that time, even if the elites of the [Southern Incline legion] arrive here, we will be safe and unharmed.”

As this news came , the morale of the soldiers were even higher.。

The original anxiousness and unrest was completely swept away.

That’s right, this time the mission was exceeding important. Mister Liu had created tens of maps of the Explosive Snow glacier and the territory of the Snow ground demon court. This could be counted as wealth of the entire army, even the empire empire. It must be believed that if the formation airship were to encounter danger, Youyan Pass would absolutely not abandon them. Once they received this news, they would definitely send out top class experts as reinforcements for them.

Ye Qingyu looked at Liu Zongyuan and Mister Liu.

Without knowing why, even through the contents of the words of these people seemed to boost morale, but Ye Qingyu faintly felt, that these were just comforting words said to lift their spirits.

After another ten breaths had passed by——

“Wuwu.....”

Big Head stood up again, climbing to Ye Qingyu’s shoulder. His throat emitted with a low growl, deadly staring in front of him.

Ye Qingyu heart thudded.

They had came again.

“Prepare to battle!”

This time, there was not a need for Ye Qingyu’s warning. Liu Zongyuan immediately reacted.

Before his sound had finished ——

The clouds completely dispersed.

In front of them there was a black ‘current’, like the tide of death, that

completely covered the skies as they approached.

What also appeared at the same time, was a flood like clamour of the caws of crows.

As if death had arrived, there were countless crows cawing. The noise emitted was extremely frantic and sharp, countless of them mixed together. The sensation it gave off, was as if there were sound waves hitting and rebounding off each other, creating some sort of chaotic and fatal frequency. The soldiers on the metal plates, in an instant had the sensation that countless little daggers and swords were stabbing into their ears. Their entire heart became hot tempered, making them want to murder the people standing next to them.....

“It’s the [Black crows of misfortune]. Everyone activate your inner yuan, and close off your hearing.”

Liu Zongyuan loudly shouted.

Ye Qingyu, in the first instant, activated the [White Horse battle armour].

White light completely covered his body. At the same time, there was a hidden metal formation activating in the white helmet. There was still the silver liquid that instantly became a silver coloured face plate, protecting his face and facial features.

This liquid face plate, completely blocked away the boundless and endless, chaotic and disturbing, caws of the crows. At the same time, it

also heightened Ye Qingyu's sense and extended his range of detection.

Everything around him, in his vision, became clearer. Within several hundred metres, he could even see a thread.

In Ye Qingyu's mind, he recalled the introduction about the [Black crows of misfortune] that had he read on a scroll before.

This was one of the most peculiar divisions of the great flying divisions in the snow ground demon race.

This was a black coloured flying division of the snow ground demon race. Their intelligence and strength was low, the large majority of black crows could not even count as demon warriors and were only demon soldiers. Their intelligence was much lower than the other demon races at the same stage. They travelled in flocks, and relied on their countless and boundless numbers to destroy their opponents. They were extremely sensitive to death, and had no fear of death whatsoever. In many battles, even if the black crow flying division had died to the last bird, they would not retreat and continue charging. Some people said this was bravery, some people called this stupidity.....

This was a snow ground demon race that reproduced at a terrifying rate.

As if it would never ever completely die.

Very evidently, the division of [Black crows of misfortune] appearing in front of them, was not to kill the people on the formation airship.

This was done to delay the airship.

This was an extremely bad sign.

Because it represented, the previous [Snow ground boat bats] had already passed on the news of the formation airship. And after receiving such news, there was a high up decision maker of the demon race nearby who had very quickly produced a strategy. They had sent out a division that was best at delaying, using the black crow battle division to tarry the progress of the formation airship. And for the coming operation of the demon race, win the greatest amount of time.

The worst situation had appeared.

“Charge past!”

Liu Zongyuan roared as he bit his teeth and screamed.

Twenty metal formation yuan qi cannons, at the same moment spat out the cannon fire.

The shooting star breaking armour arrows were like rain, shooting at the black swathe of black crows that they could not see the end of at all.

Battle exploded in an instant.

Ye Qingyu activated the [White horse battle armour] transforming to a

streak of light, directly entering into the black coloured tide.

The white horse wings were like blades of death. Instantly, it sliced apart space and air. It was unknown just how many huge black crows it slaughtered. The lights of the Little Shang sword, was like a sickle harvesting wheat, reaping the life of the black crows. This life form with a wingspan of around two metres long, and a black beak like iron, with talons like blades could hardly pose as any sort of threat to Ye Qingyu.
.....

Big Head with a shocking stableness, tightly clenched onto Ye Qingyu's shoulder.

No matter how fast Ye Qingyu sped through the air or changed his direction, it seemed not to affect Big Head in the slightest.

At this moment, Ye Qingyu had no trace of fear.

With the [White horse armour] protecting him, he was like a sharp drill, from beginning to end in front of the formation airship. Without reserving any of his strength, using his strongest power, he fought against the current in the black tides of crows, forcibly breaking apart a passage way for the formation airship!

The black crows fell like dumplings from the skies, dying.

The scarlet red demon blood completely covered the air.

It was unknown just how much demonic blood covered the White

Horse wings.

Even Ye Qingyu himself did not realise, that in the hidden formations of the white horse wings it was as if it were absorbing these blood. The silver coloured wings of the white horse battle armour, began absorbing more and more of the limitless demonic blood. The white horse wings became increasingly snowy white. The originally somewhat damaged portions, was right now slowly recovering and reparing.

Finally—

Su!

The vision in front of their eyes brightened.

Ye Qingyu had finally rushed out from the flock of crows.

And what followed after was the formation airship.

the current of black crows were left far far behind them.

But everyone did not have time to breath air to recover, when another demon race battalion appeared in front of them.

This time, it was not a natural flying battle division.

It was two massive snow ground demon race battleships.

Because the territory of the snow ground demon race was extremely poor in terms of natural resources and materials, the demon race could not be like the humans and construct airships through raw materials. They used the sea of consciousness of great demons after they had died. The majority of airships of the demon race used the skeleton and corpses of great demons as its main components. Through a special demon formation enhancement process after, they had the power of flight and battle. The demon race airships in front of them were the corpses of two huge eagles. The silver coloured wings were about a hundred metres in length, with a width of thirty metres. From far away, it was like it was alive. as if two living snow ground huge eagles were there. It gave off an incomparable visual shock.

If not for the appearance of a huge tower and bannisters on the back of the huge eagles, as well as sails and cables and the numerous demon soldiers, perhaps Ye Qingyu would really have thought that they had encountered two terrifying snow ground huge eagles.

Very evidently, the two huge snow ground eagles were at least the class of demon commander when they were alive. When they perished, their body did not rot away and their muscles and bone were as hard as steel. It was the perfect material to construct a battle fort. This was used to great effect, to construct a battle ship.

Chapter 156 – Bizarre matter

For humans, the corpses of experts were something that they regarded as sacred. Normally, they would inter it deeply into the ground, or perhaps use some other methods to preserve them appropriately. This type of method where corpses were refined down into other objects or materials, was regarded as something extremely malicious. It was not allowed by human society and was something that everyone despised.

But for the Snow ground demon race, everything was the complete reverse.

Using the corpses of elders who had passed away to create weapons and battleships, was a method of showing respect to their elders.

Even great demons themselves, hoped that after perishing, their corpses would be of use to the demon race, and contribute to the survival of the race.

From ancient times to now, the demon race had always thought they were the lifeforms that inherited the will of the world. After death, their soul would be in the heavens, brightening the nine heavens. And their corpse would return to the earth, transforming into mountains and rivers as well as the mineral resources of the earth. On some perspective, being refined to weapons or battleships, was also a type of returning to the great earth. It was even more beneficial for their race. Contributing even after their death, was an incomparable glory for them.

It seems like these huge eagle battleships, had a extremely high

specification. It could absolutely be counted as one of the top class divisions of the [Southern incline legion] of the demon race.

The instant they saw the two huge eagle battle ships appear, the colour of Liu Zongyuan's face completely changed.

The main battle power of the demon race, would really appear here?

Could it be that the demon race had already set up precautions and defences in front of them?

Wasn't it said that the demon race was right now completely in chaos?

How was it possible that their reaction speed would be so quick?

The expression of the soldiers on the metal plates also changed.

The formation airship they were on had been modified; with their speed and defensive power the strongest. But their offensive power was not that strong. For the purposes of concealment and detection, the airship type they had chosen was a middle class investigative airship and was not the main battle ship of the Youyan army. And as for the two huge eagle battle ship, could absolutely be counted as the main battle force of the demon race. To handle one was already very difficult. If two appeared, they absolutely had no chance of victory. Even if they wanted to escape, they could not escape.

At this moment, the [Army of Youyan Pass] that was known as one of the most elite armies in the empire, completely demonstrated their

bravery and quality.

Even in despair, the soldiers did not collapse.

They silently took out a red silk scarf from their chests, tying it on their foreheads.

The red scarf fluttered in the strong winds of the cold air at the demon race territory. It was as if flame after scorching flame was lit.

Every soldier in the [Army of Youyan Pass] believed, that if they died in the territory of the demon race, if they died in foreign lands, that as long as their pride was not dead, as long as their honour did not fall, they could still return home. Even if their bodies rotted away, even if their flesh became the food of the demon race, but this red scarf could still lead the way back in the afterworld back to their homes. They could still make their souls return to the homes that they had once died to defend, they could transform into the sparking stars in the arc of heaven, able to protect their closest people.

When they met with an situation with no hope, the soldiers would wear red scarves on their head.

On one hand it was to lead their souls back home. On the others hand, it was to break the cauldrons and sink the boats¹ encouraging themselves and their comrades to fight shoulder to shoulder to the death.

The red scarves fluttered and blew.

Such was the fate of soldiers.

This was the last battle of the soldiers.

Even Liu Zongyuan himself, was wearing a red scarf on his head.

At this time, any speech to encourage morale, would be shown to be superfluous and pale.

If death was really going to descend, if their final destination was really going to arrive today, then he would accompany his brothers, to beautifully finish walking their last stretch of the road.

Ye Qingyu was silent.

Of course he knew, just what wearing a red scarf on the head represented.

Was he afraid?

A little bit.

He had many things he had still not accomplished. He had still not found out the mystery behind the secret priest shrine within the Snow country. He was yet to meet again with the little loli Song Xiaojun that had left with the sword immortal Wang Jianru. There was also Aunt Lan, Little Grass and Tang San, as well as the Wen Wan and Li Shizen of the Vanguard camp....

But, even if so, what about it.

Whatever reason, at this moment, could not become an excuse for him to flee from battle.

At this moment, Ye Qingyu was not only a soldier in the army, he was a martial artist of the human race.

As a martial artist, or as a member of the human race, he had the duty to protect the existence of his race from the very beginning.

And at this moment, it was time for him to carry out his duty.

Ye Qingyu activated the White Horse armour, white light cold qi encircling his body, the little Shang sword in his hand shimmering with radiance

Everyone, was waiting for the moment where the battle would explode.

As if the next moment, blood and white bone, cannon fire and smoke, would rupture and sputter in front of their eyes.

But——

A breath of time went past.

Two breaths of time went past.

Twenty breaths of time went past.

In Heaven and Earth, it was completely silent.

The opposing demon race huge eagle battleship, still silently floated in the skies.

The hunting sail on the battle ship made noises, the triangle multicoloured sail crashing and fluttering. On the tower and the metal plates, row after row of demon soldiers stood, their expressions solemn and malevolent. There seemed to be nothing out of the ordinary. But there was an extremely peculiar atmosphere that coalesced around the two huge eagle battleships.

Ye Qingyu gradually realised something.

“This is.....something is not right, it’s somewhat too peaceful.”

Ye Qingyu eyebrows frowned, looking in detail at the battleships opposite them.

Normally, when two battleships met, the first one who let out the first strike, would be the one with the absolute upper hand. Such an opportunity was transient and fleeting. On the huge eagle battle ship, there would definitely be demon warriors, even the existence of demon commanders leading this ship. Everyone of them were well experienced famous leaders. It was impossible for them to delay and not attack after

seeing the formation airship of the human race.

But the two huge eagle ships in front of them, maintained a hard to describe silence.

As if they had not seen Ye Qingyu and the others or the formation airship.

Bizarre.

A mysterious bizarreness.

Ye Qingyu frowned, looking at the Big Head who was still quietly lazily basking in the sun. A flash of understanding suddenly appeared in his mind.

Xiu!

He activated the white horse battle armour, the wings extending. He headed towards the two huge eagle battle ships.

The other people were shocked by this.。

“Brother Ye, quickly return.....” Liu Zongyuan loudly shouted.

Ye Qingyu gestured from far away, indicating that they were not to follow. He carefully and cautiously neared the huge eagle battleships.

On the formation airship, the eyes of the soldiers was instantly filled with hot tears.

What a heroic officer, what a selfless youth.

From the moment they interacted, the soldiers excluded and refused to accept Ye Qingyu. The soldiers felt this young man from the academy, was a young man that had not even entered onto the battlefield before. It made the proud soldiers unable to accept the fact that he had such a high military status. But right now, they started to feel ashamed for their shallowness.

Liu Zongyuan similarly felt the blood in his body burning.

A true brave warrior.

An officer that was absolutely worth engraving in one's memory

An.....

Brother Ye, you are far too in a rush!

But.....

Fine!

Rest assured and go first. You go first and I, Liu Zongyuan will quickly come find you and walk the same path. In the underworld, under the nine springs, we will still fight shoulder to shoulder.

Liu Zongyuan was nearly brimming with tears.

It was as if he could already see the Ye Qingyu being surrounded by the experts of the demon race, and the cannon fire, that tragic scene of him perishing and falling.....

But, the coming scene, did not develop according to his expectations.

“Eh?What is this?”

As his tears hovered, Liu Zongyuan was blank.

Because he inexplicably saw, that after Ye Qingyu activated the White Horse battle armour, he unexpectedly, without any obstructions at all, boarded on the huge eagle battleship. The demon race on the metal plates did not have any reactions whatsoever. After Ye Qingyu observed for a brief moment, as if spasming, he waved them over in a exaggerated fashion.....

What was it?

Liu Zongyuan was completely blank.

Why was it that the demon race had no reaction, and allowed Ye

Qingyu to board?

Why did the battle not kick off?

After a moment of blankness, Liu Zongyuan suddenly realised something. His heart could not stop madly beating, turning around to shout: “Everyone protect the airship.” He himself activated the wings of his battle armour, transforming into a ray of light that neared the huge eagle battle ship and landing beside Ye Qingyu.

“What is it?” Liu Zongyuan’s voice was shaking.

Ye Qingyu shrugged his shoulder, his shock and emotionally moved state hard to disguise. “Old Liu, look for yourself, a strange matter....a false alarm. I don’t now what happened, but the demon soldiers on these two battleships has completely died off. There’s not even one that is still alive and breathing. Look at this....” Saying this, Ye Qingyu extended his hand to push a fierce and muscular snow ground bear warrior.

Puchi!

This Snow ground demon bear that was enough to uproot rivers and mountain, fell softly without any force in its body.

Liu Zongyuan widened his eyes.

.....

Ten breaths later.

Ye Qingyu and Liu Zongyuan had nearly completely searched through the two huge eagle battleships on the inside and outside.

Within the two battleships, there was not even a single demon that was alive.

They had completely died.

On the two huge eagle battleships, there were two thousand or so lifeforms of the demon race. Within, there was not a lack for powerful experts with unfathomable strength as well as high class snow ground demon races. According to Liu Zongyuan's experienced judgement, there were at least ten demon commanders, four hundred or so demon warriors on the two battleships. It was an extremely powerful force, far, far exceeding their previous expectations. Such an arrangement greatly exceeded the standard scale of a battleship. This was nearly a large scale demon race battle division, But for some reason, so many experts of the demon race, had completely died on this ship.

What was even more bizarre, was that there was not signs of any battle on the huge eagle battleships.

Every demon soldier, every demon warrior, every demon commander was either peacefully sitting or standing. There were different expressions on the faces of everyone on the two battleships. There were faint smiles, peacefulness, and there was some demon races that had gathered around and was conversing. As if a second or two before, nothing had happened whatsoever on the two eagle battle ships. The

next second later, there was a terrifying apocalyptic disaster that occurred. No matter how strong or weak they were, their life was reaped away in a split instant.

The arrival of such a disaster occurred so quickly, that not even existences like demon commanders could react in time.

Ten great demon commanders, every one of them was comparable to a top expert of the Bitter Sea stage of the human race.

Instantly dead.

Bizarre.

Horrifying.

Sinister.

Under the arch of heaven, above the sea of clouds, the sun was fierce. But Ye Qingyu and Liu Zongyuan both instantly had cold sweat covering their bodies.

Such a matter, was simply too inexplicable.

For such a strong demon race battleship to be destroyed through such a peculiar method was something that had never heard of before.

Ye Qingyu and Liu Zongyuan, could not hide their fear and shock at seeing this sight. They were standing in the fierce sun, but instantly felt surrounded by a gloominess they had never experienced before. As if a Death god was hiding somewhere in a corner, soundlessly and sinisterly smiling as he stared at them. As if death would descend at any moment.

“Without any injuries, without battle occurring. As if the life force of the demon race was absorbed by some terrifying existence in an instant.”

Liu Zongyuan carefully observed.

Just what kind of power, was able to do such a thing?

A Heaven Ascension stage of the human race?

Or was it a demon king in the demon race?

Hard to imagine.

“No matter what, these two battleships no longer pose as a threat to us. We cannot tarry, we must immediately depart and rush away.” Liu Zongyuan awakened from his shock, and did not dwell on this bizarre matter anymore. Only by rushing and hurrying back towards the territory of the human race, could they be safe.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

But he faintly felt, that something was not right. But he had no reason

to oppose Liu Zongyuan’s decision.

- 1. cut off their path of retreat ↩

Chapter 157 – Yan Buhui

If it was in normal times, Liu Zongyuan would definitely not abandon the resources and materials of these two huge eagle battleships. Even if he needed to drag it, he would them back metre by metre to Youyan Pass. Besides, on the two demon battleships, there were so many corpses of experts of the demon race. They would definitely contain some secrets of the demon race. If they carefully searched through the ships, they would absolutely profit greatly.

But right now, they needed to flee for their lives.

Furthermore, on the formation airship, there were tens of snow white maps that recorded down the arrangements of their military bases and terrain of the Explosive Snow glacier as well as the Snow Ground demon court.

On the significance of strategy, the importance of these scrolls were much more important than the two eagle battleships.

After returning to the formation airship, Liu Zongyuan ordered for the ship to speed on utterly, not delaying in the slightest.

Boom!

The airship broke through the cloud layers, leaving a trail through the skies, travelling like a ray of light.

The two huge eagle battleships that were like two spirits, very quickly disappeared behind them.

“Below is the den of the [Snow Dragon] that we have passed previously.” Liu Zongyuan pointed below. He could not help but be somewhat emotional: “This time, we have really escaped from death. Who would have thought that we would be discovered by a flock of boar bats. I guess, that boar bat battalion, should have been coincidentally passing by that area and discovered the traces of us by accident. They only decided at that moment to ambush us. This was our misfortune.....”

Ye qingyu smiled, not saying anything.

He surveyed below him.

Above the ice plains, everything was peaceful.

It seemed that the snow dragon had already hidden deep beneath the icy grounds, in some sort of half hibernation state. They did not see the strange scene of the [Snow dragon turning over] again.

“But it is not right to say our luck was bad. It is as if something is protecting us from the background. The demon race on those two huge eagle battleships died in such a strange and peculiar way. Otherwise, we could not escape so successfully.....” Liu spoke more than he normally did. Even though he was well experienced, and was a famous warrior that had undergone a hundred battles, his emotional fluctuation was still very large after escaping from disaster.

Ye Qingyu was about to say something, but suddenly frowned.

He looked at the icy plains under them. There was a strange shaped icy peaked that looked slightly familiar. Thinking about it carefully, his heart could not help but be confused.

Did they not just pass this icy peak?

Why would this icy peak suddenly appear beneath them again?

Ye Qingyu's memory was exceptional, with the ability to not forget things he had seen. He could confirm, that about ten breaths previously, the airship had passed by this icy peak before. According to the current speed of the formation airship, the distance they had passed since then was more than ten miles. It was absolutely impossible for them to return.....

In an instant, cold sweat seeped out from Ye Qingyu's back.

He glanced at the excited Liu Zongyuan, and without any expression, continued to observe and take note.

Another ten breaths of time.

Ye Qingyu's expression became extremely troubled.

Right now, he was a hundred percent sure, that an inexplicable matter, was occurring on the formation airship.

Because that strange shaped icy peak, had already appeared for the third time below the formation airship.

In other words, the formation airship's speed seemed to be extremely rapid, but in reality, there was no difference from walking in a fixed position. They were not able to fly out from the fifty mile radius around the strange shaped icy peak. Right now, they seemed to be inexplicably travelling in circles.

Ye Qingyu did not dare tarry, giving the results of his observation and informing Liu Zongyuan.

“What? This....how is this possible?” Liu Zongyuan was extremely shaken. He could hardly believe this.

At this time, a voice came from behind them--

“Patrolling envoy Ye is not wrong. We are just running in circles at a fixed position. Officer Liu, tell the formation airship to stop, and not to waste the energy of the Origin crystal.” It was the voice of the [Painting saint] Mister Liu.

Mister Liu had already appeared behind the two at some unknown time.

Ye Qingyu rushed to ask: “Could it be that Mister has discovered something?”

Mister Liu's lean face had a trace of a bitter smile: "Only by listening to the words of Patrolling officer Ye did I realised this fact. We have already mistakenly entered into a seal formation, if we are not able to break it, we will forever be trapped here, with no method to get free. No matter how fast we fly, we will just be travelling around in circles.....although the formation airship is fast, but the laws of space at this area has already gotten disordered. We have no way to leave from here purely by relying on speed."

Ye Qingyu and Liu Zongyuan looked at each other, their hearts extremely shaken.

How was this possible?

Just when had this occurred?

Just what kind of sealed formation was it, that they had not noticed anything and entered into it?

"Then what should we do now?" Liu Zongyuan asked with a frown.。

He had already began to calm down gradually.

"I also don't know.....Let's first observe, perhaps there is still a chance....." Miste Liu had bitter smile on his face, shaking his head, about to say something.

But at that time, he suddenly saw something inexplicable and incredible. He stood fiercely dumbfounded where he was, as if his entire

person had fossilised. Only a while later did he react, then he was as if he saw a ghost, his gaze emitting a disbelieving light. Lifting his hand to point far away, his body began shivering violently. Saying nonsensical words: “You.....Him.....This is.....It’s him, so it was him.....”

Ye Qingyu followed along Mister Liu’s gaze with confusion. He could not help but be dumbfounded.

He could see in the air a hundred metres away, without knowing exactly when, a figure had appeared.

It seemed to be a human, around eighteen to nineteen or years of age. He should be a male, very young, a lean figure, but his face was incomparably handsome. His skin was like jade, with a strange radiance and his face was so pretty that it did not seem real. He was wearing a long white robe, and there was a shocking wound at his waist. He was nearly cut in half at the waist. On the wound, there was an amber like coloured liquid wriggling, as if it was helping him recover his life force.
.....

This person had his eyes tightly closed, his long eyelashes fluttering in the wind

He was laying on a white cloud, his chest slowly rising and falling. His expression was calm and gentle, as if he was sweetly asleep.

But without knowing why, the moment he saw that person, Ye Qingyu suddenly had a feeling that was like the fear and trepidation one felt before disaster.

The white clouds floated.

The young man silently lay on the white cloud.

His countenance was so peaceful, it as if he was a scholarly noble young master sleeping on a jade bed.

In the silence, there was strangeness contained within.

As if time had stopped at this moment.

After a long time.

Mister Liu finally let out a long breath, as if he had just woken from a terrifying nightmare.

“So it was him, it really is him.....” Mister Liu bitterly smiled, shaking his head: “Such is fate, such is luck.”

A sense of dread and misfortune could not be helped but be born in Ye Qingyu's heart as he heard this. Ever since meeting Mister Liu, Ye Qingyu's impression of him was that he was a person that would never be shocked by anything, an extremely stable person. Before, even when they met with the Boar bats, the black crows and the huge eagle battleship, this [Painting saint] had always maintained a hard to describe calm expression. But at this moment, the person that was sleeping on the cloud, just what was his background, that it made Mister Liu lose his composure like so.

“Mister knows that person?” Ye Qingyu could not help but ask.

Liu Zongyuan also had a face filled with questions, looking towards Mister Liu.

Mister Liu let out another long sigh, nodding his head. He had an agonising expression. “I know.”

“Who is he?” Ye Qingyu asked again.

Mister Liu was silent for several breaths of time. At last, he seemed to have made his determination, his mouth lightly spitting out two words
——

“Yan Buhui¹ ! ”

Yan Buhui?

He had never heard of this name before.

Ye Qingyu was blank, saying: “It’s the name of a person? What’s his background?”

Before Mister Liu could reply, Liu Zongyuan’s expression greatly changed after hearing these words beside him. This person did not lack for bravery – even when he faced death directly, how would not even feel

the slightest trace of fear. But his body began shivering uncontrollably at this instant. There was a shocked expression contained within his eyes.....

Ye Qingyu was greatly curious.

“Officer Liu also knows that person?”

But Liu Zongyuan still had not calmed down from the demons of his dreams.

It was as if he had not heard Ye Qingyu’s words. His gaze was still fixed on that young man lying on the white clouds.

Mister Liu breathed deeply in. “Yan Buhui, is that person.”

“That person? Which?” Ye Qingyu was yet to realise.

But as these words were spoken, a flash of insight suddenly flitted through his mind. He suddenly understood the meaning behind these words. He could not help but ask: “Yan Buhui, is that person? It’s the greatest traitor in the history of the human race that Mister Liu spoke of, that the person who betrayed the empire and his race, the once peerless genius of Youyan Pass?”

“It is him.” Liu Zongyuan had finally recovered from his stupor.

He spent a great deal of effort to calm himself down. Then he said :

“The name of Yan Buhui, is really the nightmare of countless people of Youyan Pass. After so many years has passed, there is still no one who is willing to mention such a name, whether they are a soldier or an officer. That name is like a night mare to us. When that matter happened in the past, I was only a little soldier. I have never seen him before, but I have heard his name far too many times. Who would have thought.....that today I would truly encounter him.”

Ye Qingyu’s heart was massively shaken.

He was finally greatly disturbed.

Subconsciously, he could not help but look again at the young man laying there.

Could it really be that young person?

The person seemed to be kind and handsome, like a rich young master, seeming to be somewhat thin and weak. He was pretty like a girl. Was he really the greatest traitor in the history of Snow country? A person that had once killed countless soldiers of the Empire? A person that had nailed countless soldiers of Youyan Pass on the pillar of humiliation?

Ye Qingyu had previously imagined what he looked like.

But he absolutely had not imagined, that he would have such a face.

Just what kind of heart was hidden beneath that peaceful and young face?

Long and painstaking effort had been taken to plan this operation by the [Youyan army]. It was all for this person. Did Mister Liu not say that the front lines were about to succeed. Why was it that he appeared in such a place?

Seeing the frightening and disturbing wound at Yan Buhui's waist, Ye Qingyu vaguely realised something.

It seemed like the [Gale operation] of the front lines had not succeeded. They had injured Yan Buhui, but they were not able to kill this traitor.

Wind blew again.

The atmosphere was strange and tense.

Yan Buhui silently lay on the cloud. If not for the movement of the wound of his waist, if not for the rise and fall of his chest as he breathed, it seemed like he was really dead.

Arrows and cannon, aimed at him.

But Liu Zongyuan did not have the courage to order them to attack.

Mister Liu remained silent for a long time. Finally, he took a step forward, opening his mouth. "Buhui, long time no see."

His tone, was as if reuniting with an old friend and reminiscing about old times.

“Mister Liu, it;’s been a long time since we last met.” The young man on the white clouds had his eyes tightly closed. His tone was gentle, without the slightest killing intent whatsoever. He had not yet opened his eyes, but evidently he had discovered the existence of everyone, and recognised Mister Liu.

1. His name can be translated literally to mean, never returning to Youyan Pass. [↩](#)

Chapter 158 – He stays behind

From his tone, it seemed like Yan Buhui knew Mister Liu.

Ye Qingyu suddenly recalled, that Mister Liu had previously said that Yan Buhui had previously tasted tea along with him. Then did this mean, that the two people were once friends?”

“It seems like even War God Lu was not able to kill you by attacking personally.” When Mister Liu spoke again, his expression was already much more relaxed. There was even a faint smile: “After so many years passed, it seems like your strength has grown yet again.”

On the white cloud, Yan Buhui slowly opened his eyes.

Ye Qingyu’s heart was fiercely shaken.

Just what kind of gaze was this.

It was as if his eyes were unfocused. It was hard to describe just what kind of emotion was contained within his eyes. As if it was peace, as if it was rage, as if it was sorrow....Ye Qingyu had never seen ,that it was possible for so many complicated emotions to be contained in someone’s eyes. It was just a gaze, but it was as if it all the emotions in this world had immersed within.

“If my strength had not grown, I would long be dead.” Yan Buhui replied blandly.

His expression was calm, his gaze without any focus. He did not look towards Mister Liu. As if he could see through the formation airship and the air around, seeing the remote desolate space time.

“But you have been injured.” Mister Liu smiled as he said these words. “To recover from your injuries, you killed and absorbed the life force and yuan qi of the experts of the demon race under your command. From this, one can tell you have been very heavily injured.”

Ye Qingyu heard this and suddenly understood.

It seemed like he was the reason that all the experts of the demon race on huge eagle battleships had died. The reason such a strange situation occurred, was not because they were ambushed. In reality it was because Yan Buhui used some secret technique to absorb their life force and yuan qi, to recover from the injuries on his body. No wonder there was not the slightest trace of battle on the battleship, and there was not the slightest reaction of the experts of the demon race before dying.

A terrifying method.

A poisonous intent.

He would not even spare the subordinates under his command.

“I have even killed people of the human race. What about a mere demon race.....What does it matter if I was injured. My strength has grown, but so has Lu Zhaoge.” Yan Buhui gaze retreated, finally giving

Mister Liu a glance. His expression was still peaceful: “Being injured at his hands, is not something to be ashamed about. Ten years ago, Lu Zhaoge was already someone with a titled Bitter Sea stage of cultivation. After ten years has passed, he has naturally gotten even more powerful. Such a truly powerful expert, he does not dare to do battle in a straightforward fashion, but instead spend time and effort to create a scheme to kill me. Should I not feel honoured? The so called War God of Youyan pass, is only just so!”

Mister Liu’s expression changed.

“You dare, to insult commander Lu!”

“Mad person, shut your mouth.”

“Traitor, go die!”

The soldiers on the formation airship were all elites that had fought in over a hundred battles. Many people treated the War God of Youyan Pass, Lu Zhaoge as their spiritual idol. They utterly respected and worshipped him. Even if they were facing the apocalyptic demon king Yan Buhui they could not help but be angered when they heard him insult Lu Zhaoge. They directly opened their mouths and reprimanded Yan Buhui.

Yan Buhui hearing this, only faintly smiled.

He did not explode and strike out. He did not even glance at the righteously angry elite soldiers.

A short while later, Yan Buhui looked at the clouds far off, as if he was recalling something. Only after a while did he say in a leisurely and cool tone: “Just when was it, that I was worshipping that man like you people. I regarded him as a god, I regarded him as a father. I thought he was righteous and fair, that there was nothing that he was unable to do. I thought he was the saint that could rescue this world.....haha, how laughable. A man will just be a man, how it is possible that he could be a god.....If it was my previous temperament, then you people would have long died ten thousand times over. But right now, I won’t kill you.”

Mister Liu stood at the head of the ship, a faint smile on his face : “You won’t kill us? Could it be that you are about to release us?”

On the face of Yan Buhui, there was a mocking smile. “Mister Liu, it has been so many years we have not seen each other, but you are still a schemer. But in these years, after speaking so much, did it prove to be of use?”

Mister Liu seemed as if he knew what the opposing party was pointing at. He remained silent, not speaking.

“I have not drunk Mister Liu’s tea for some many years.” Yan Buhui’s suddenly changed the subject, his tone calm and tranquil.

Mister Liu lifted his head, sighing. “How difficult can this be. Xinger, bring over the tea set.”

The expression of the student called Xinger was calm as he turned to enter into the cabin of the airship. Very quickly, he came out again. In

his embrace, there was a tea table and an entire set of tea utensils. Carefully and cautiously he placed it at the head of the ship. Without waiting for Mister Liu's instructions, he stood by the side, beginning to boil water.

Yan Buhui lifted his head.

A white cloud floated over, as if it was a physical object. It enveloped the tea set as well as Xinger within, then lifted, floating through the air.

This scene, was as if he was soaring through the clouds and harnessing the mists.

Mister Liu frowned. Then he looked at the Ye Qingyu beside him: "Patrolling envoy Ye, bring me over."

Ye Qingyu activated his white horse wings, supporting Mister Liu's shoulder. His figure flashed, landing on the white clouds.

His feet sunk in, as if he was stepping on solid ground.

Mister Liu sat cross legged. His manner was like when he was painting. He began to boil and prepare the tea.

His actions was extremely familiar, every movement and gesture containing a beauty that was hard to describe using language. It was as if these movements contained the essence of the way. Ye Qingyu had previously seen Xinger preparing tea; at that time he had felt Xinger's tea art was near the way. But only when he saw Mister Liu preparing the tea,

did he understood that the difference was still great when Xinger was compared to Mister Liu.

There was no wind in the air.

The white clouds stood there. It was as if the surrounding space had stopped entirely.

The formation airship was silent.

Everyone on the airship was peaceful as if they had fossilised.

In the blink of an eye, the tea had already been prepared.

“Please.” Mister Liu lifted his hand.

Yan Buhui walked step by step through the air, cloud after cloud appearing under his footsteps, like blossom after blossom of perfect lotuses. The translucent petals supported him. He came over and sat in front of the tea table. His entire movement was like an immortal descending to the mortal world. From top to bottom, one could not see the slightest trace of demon qi on him. It really made it hard to believe, that such a elegant and noble young master, was a person that had accepted the transplant of a demon bone through a secret technique of the demon race. That he was a traitor to the demon race.

In the celadon teacup, the amber coloured tea emitted faint steam.

Yan Buhui opened his mouth and sucked.

The tea transformed into a jet of water, completely entering into his mouth.

Seeing this scene, the Ye Qingyu standing beside them could not help but remember that night when he himself had drank tea with Mister Liu in the cabin. At that time, he had also completely finished it in one gulp. No wonder Mister Liu said emotionally that he was very like that person. It seems like, the relationship between Mister Liu and Yan Buhui was not simple. The two people must have drank tea together many times previously. Otherwise, a fierce person like Yan Buhui would not suddenly want to drink Mister Liu's tea at this moment.

Ye Qingyu at this moment, suddenly felt that he understood Yan Buhui a little.

After all, he was a human. Even if he capitulated to the demon race, but they were after all not the same race. Even if the [Burning snow demon commander] believed in Yan Buhui, but the other demon races would not be willing to accept him. He should have been very lonely in these years?

A human living in the demon race, with his gaze filled with alien races, just how boring would that be?

“Good tea. I have not drunk such for many years.” Yan Buhui drank three mouthful consecutively, sighing in admiration.

Mister Liu did not lift his head, seriously preparing the tea. Pouring tea

into another cup: “Even better tea is a waste if you drink it like so.”

“Words that are even more right, by speaking it over and over again so many times, is a waste.” Yan Buhui replied blandly. “Just how many times have you said these words to me?”

Mister Liu had a faint smile. “When the matter is right, no matter how many times I have to say it, I am willing to continue on doing so.”

These words had a hidden meaning contained within.

How could Yan Buhui not be able to hear the meaning behind these words?

Drinking another cup of tea, Yan Buhui replied calmly: “How do you know that you are definitely right? Like a cup of tea. It originally is something that is used to solve thirst. When it was created, it only has the value of being drank. As long as it is able to realise it’s value, it is the same no matter how it is drank. This is the same as humans; as long as one is able to realise their own value, no matter how they do so is not important. The reason why humans want to become stronger is to control others. Since the human race does not accept me, then by transforming into a demon, I similarly can become stronger. When I truly become stronger, sooner or later I can control all of you.”

His previous manner was apathetic, as if he did not care for fame or profit whatsoever.

But when he spoke these words, his aura changed. His confidence and

aura was strong and invincible, like a peerless divine sword being unsheathed.

“You’re wrong. Tea has to be carefully tasted; only then can you sense the special essence within. Humans, has things they can do and things they cannot do. Only then, can they be famous throughout all the ages.” Mister Liu lifted a tea cup, slowly sipping it down, refuting in a leisurely tone.

Yan Buhui had a brief smile. “Really? In the past, when I had my principles, what was my consequence? I nearly died as a consequence, with my wife and children unable to be protected. Today, I do not care anymore. I am completely unscrupulous, as long as I am able to take my vengeance, as long as I make those people pay the price, make them fear me, afraid of me. I will make them hear my name and be scared witless, hiding far away. They will not dare to make me as their enemy. I feel that this can already prove everything.”

“The matters in the past, in truth.....” Mister Liu was about to say something.

Yan Buhui smiled in disdain, waving his hand. Drinking another three cups of tea in one gulp, he fiercely stood up, a aura of rejecting someone outside a thousand miles away. Calmly he said: “Fine, these pointless great teachings, pointless great principles, I have heard far too many times. From when I was small, I have heard far too many moral teachings like this. Yet I still cannot live out my life in a good way. Mister Liu, don’t say anymore. The Yan Buhui today, is no longer the innocent scholar at Youyan Pass of the past.”

Mister Liu hearing this, stopped what he was about to say. Finally he

could only let out a long sigh.

“Haha, after so many years, drinking Mister Liu’s tea is still a pleasurable matter. Today, your luck is not good. To escape to my place by coincidence, and to mistakenly enter into my recovery formation. But I won’t kill you.” Yan Buhui stood up, laughing loudly. “Mister Liu, I’ll bother you with a matter.”

“Please speak.” Mister Liu let out a breath of relief in his heart.

Yan Buhui clearly said each word: “Please can you go tell Lu Zhaoge, that if he wasn’t able to kill me this time, then he won’t have another chance in the future. In these tens of years, the progress of his martial cultivation is far too slow. If this continues on, then in another five years, he will not be my opponent anymore. At that time, our roles will be reversed. At that time, it is me who will hunt for him and kill him. I hope at that time, he will be as lucky as I have been.”

A extremely powerful aura began exploding from Yan Buhui’s body.

The surrounding was smothered in a aura so powerful that it was inexplicable. Yuan qi was roiling, as if they were huge waves. The massive formation airship, was like a little raft bitterly struggling in tidal waves in such aura. It was as if it could be completely drowned at any instant. The people on the airship, including Liu Zongyuan, could not help but shiver and tremble, face filled with fear. This had nothing to do with their bravery. Their will and five senses was completely ruled by a instinctive pure fear and respect towards powerful beings.

“I will relay your words.” Mister Liu said seriously.

“Then go.” Yan Buhui flicked his hands.

Ye Qingyu gave him a glance, bringing Mister Liu and Xinger back to the formation airship.

The formation airship slowly began to activate. Just as it was about to fly and leave this ominous area.....

At that time, Yan Buhui suddenly turned his head, his gaze like lightning , landing on Ye Qingyu’s body. “I’ve changed my mind. He, stays behind.”

The person he pointed at, was namely Ye Qingyu.

Chapter 159 – Scum

Ye Qingyu's expression changed slightly.

Eh?

What was this?

It seemed like that the person that he was pointing to was himself?

It really is me?

Shit.

In this entire process, that ominous person had clearly not even given Ye Qingyu a glance. He did not even take notice of me, why would he suddenly want me to remain behind? Could it be that it was because I pretending to be unafraid of death, and brought Mister Liu to the cloud with the White Horse wings, so therefore he took special notice of me? This is really too unlucky. That old fellow Mister Liu really dragged me down. If I knew it was like this, then I should have let Liu Zongyuan fly him to the cloud.

The Liu Zongyuan next to him suddenly had a cold shiver for some reason.

“You just said that you were going to let us go.” Mister Liu stared at

Yan Buhui with a frown. “With your position today, could it be that you want to go back on your words?”

Yan Buhui’s expression was apathetic, his tone containing a hardness that could not be questioned. Indifferently he said: “The words I’ve said, can I not change it? I am not the fake gentleman that Lu Zhaoge is, what matters if I change my mind? Leave him behind, you can go. If you don’t want to go, then everyone can stay behind. Make your own decision.”

“This....” Mister Liu hesitated for a little. “How about this, I stay behind, and we can drink another cup of teas and reminiscence about old times. Let him go. With your currently position, why must you make it hard on a little child?”

“I feel his words are very correct.” Ye Qingyu quickly jumped out to supplement these words into the conversation.

Mister Liu felt his vision darkening.

“Hahaha.....” Yan Buhui began fiercely laughing loudly.

After he finished laughing, he did not even give Ye Qingyu a glance, but only stared at Mister Liu for a short while. There was a pale disdain in his gaze: “The [Painting saint] Mister Liu, is really a top character in the great army of Youyan Pass. Although you have always been low key but the demon race has long been placed at a disadvantage by you On the bounty list of the [Southern incline legion]. your name is ranked in the top twenty. If I kill you, and bring you back to the demon court, this can be counted as a great contribution, but.....” As he said to here, Yan Buhui smiled: “But in my eyes, even ten Mister Liu’s value is not worth even one

of this young man.”

Mister Liu hearing this, did not have anger from being underestimated. He only shook his head: “You have evaluated wrongly,. Patrolling envoy Ye has only been here for a month’s time.””

“That’s right, that’s right.....” Ye Qingyu quickly chimed in.

But he was ignored once again.

Yan Buhui was calm and serious as he said: “Some people, even if their name is even more famous, as long as one sees them, they will feel that they are only just so. Under their fame, they are unimpressive. And there are some people that even if you have never heard of them before, but you can sense how terrifying they are the first time you see them.” He swept his glance across Ye Qingyu. There was a hint of admiration contained within his eyes.”From my eyes, this young man is the latter. Even though his wings has not yet fully grown, but I can already see some things on his body. If I leave him be, in the future he will be the great calamity of the demon race. Why not get rid of him early.”

Mister Liu hesitated.

Yan Buhui looked at him, smiling but not smiling, saying again: “And according to my knowledge, Mister Liu you are not a practitioner of Buddhism. You would never show sentimentality for people of no value. This time you are willing swap yourself for this young man. Haha, I think that even you have seen through the potential of this youth?”

Mister Liu stared at Yan Buhui for a long time.

He knew that he had lost once again in front of his previous friend.

In reality, ever since Ye Qingyu had comprehend the natural way from his paintings, spirit raising in one night, Mister Liu already had a completely new perspective of this youth. Then afterwards, Ye Qingyu's performance as he killed the enemy was fearsome and valiant, making the [Painting saint] realise that he had estimated Ye Qingyu wrongly initially. He had not seen the value of this piece of rough jade at the very first instance. He was somewhat regretful that he had brought Ye Qingyu to such a dangerous place. If they loss such a genius, then it would be a huge loss for the entire Youyan Pass, even the entire Snow country.

But right now.....

Yan Buhui's gaze, would also be so poisonously sharp.

Seeing that Mister Liu did not continue to speak, Yan Buhui continued on: "This time, Mister Liu you've entered alone deep into the Explosive snow glacier. I don't think I need to state the reason for your excursion. If my guess is not wrong there should be maps of the [Southern Incline legion] on the Explosive Snow glacier military, about their military arrangements and the terrain within the formation airship . For Lu Zhao, this should be something that he dreamed to have in his dreams, haha....."

Mister Liu's expression greatly changed.

Liu Zongyuan was shaken, subconsciously clenching the long blade at his waist.

“Haha, no need to be nervous. Those maps, will count as my present to Lu Zhaoge. What matters if you bring it away. I long for the day that Lu Zhaoge really brings the [Army of Youyan Pass] to the Explosive Snow glacier and do battle with me. And not hide throughout the day in the turtle shell of Youyan Pass.....” In the words of the Yan Buhui, there was a surge of dominance and confidence that normal people could hardly understand. Blandly: “The value of these maps, from my perspective, is not as high as this youth. Therefore, the maps you can bring away but you must leave him behind.”

These words were resolute and decisive.

Without the slightest possibility of negotiation.

Mister Liu understood Yan Buhui's personality. He knew that since he had said such words, there was no possibility of change anymore.

If he continued to argue, then most likely the other people on the formation airship could not leave either.

But in Mister Liu's heart, he really was not willing to abandon this peerless unpolished gem Ye Qingyu.

The atmosphere, seemed desperate and solemn.

The gaze of Liu Zongyuan and the others when they looked at Ye

Qingyu held both pity and helplessness.

Mister Liu let out a sigh, about to attempt for the last time.....

But ——

“Fine!”

An excited noise sounded out on the formation airship.

The previous covering and hiding Ye Qingyu, suddenly had a smile on his face. Stepping forward and giving out a thumbs up, he waved his hand towards Yan Buhui.

“Haha, Yan Buhui is it? Good, this is far too good. In reality, no one has ever praised me like so before. But I cannot deny that your praise is the most sincere and creative. Haha, you are really making me burst with joy. Since you have so sincerely praised me, then if I don’t stay behind, it is far too boring. It is decided then. They can leave, I’ll stay behind.”

The expression of demon king Ye was excited and delighted.

As if he was a little child that had been praised to over the moon, a trace of embarrassed red really appearing on his face.

Yan Buhui was taken back.

It was the first time an expression of surprise had appeared on his face since he had materialised.

Even Mister Liu and Liu Zongyuan stared numbly at Ye Qingyu. The student Xinger barely suppressed his urge to feel Ye Qingyu's head, to confirm if this fellow was burning with fever and speaking nonsense.

“Patrolling envoy Ye, you.....” Mister Liu panicked, about to say something.“

Ye Qingyu waved his hand, a expression of that it was all for the greater good. Generously saying: “Mister Liu, no need to say anymore. He regards me as so important, how can I not cooperate with him. No need to care about me, one of my life in exchange for the lives of everyone is very worth it.”

Everyone on the ship, instantly become moved.

This was a true brave warrior.

What a selfless spirit.

If I don't enter into hell, who would enter in hell. Patrolling envoy Ye, was really a true and fearsome soldier.

Those soldiers that were somewhat more emotional than the others, already had wet tears on their face.

Those soldiers who displayed their emotions on the inside, gave Ye Qingyu the standard military salute.

But who would have guessed, that Ye Qingyu's countenance would quickly changed, laughing: "Besides, I may not really die if I stay behind. If I really reach the end, I still have an ultimate move that will definitely save me."

"What ultimate move?" Liu Zongyuan's eyes brightened.

Ye Qingyu rubbed his jaw, shamelessly grinning: "I can surrender....wahahah, since that person thinks so highly of me, I can choose to surrender. He shouldn't kill me if so."

As he finished.

There was silence between heaven and earth.

Liu Zongyuan nearly felt his vision blackening and falling to the metal plates.

Mister Liu could not laugh or cry. He had an urge to throttle this retard to death.

Those hot wet tears, those military salutes, those silent lowered heads, those wiping their armours and weapons and was praying because of they were moved by the actions of that person, their emotions were instantly dispelled. The emotions of the soldiers disappeared like snow at the beginning of snow that had fresh pissed poured on it. Not only did it

disappear, it left urine smell that made one mad.....

The mouth of Yan Buhui, curled in a amused way after being taken aback.

Scum!

Nearly everyone had such a phrase appearing in the bottom of their hearts

The retard in front of them, was he really the person that fought shoulder to shoulder beside them, that was hot blooded like a War God that killed demons along with them just before?

Could he have been furtively swapped out with a different person?

The originally tragic and solemn atmosphere was completely swept away in that instant.

Mister Liu kneaded his head, then turned and headed towards the cabin without looking back. As he walked, he said: "Start the airship, quickly start the airship. Let's go."

Ten breaths later.

The formation airship, like an arrow leaving the bow, like a startled rabbit, crazily disappeared in the far off skies.

“Eh? They’ve really left? This bunch of scoundrels, they really have no loyalty to their friends. To have really left.....” Ye Qingyu kept staring as the formation airship disappeared in the sea of clouds, clenching his teeth and cursing at them.

Opposite him.

Yan Buhui stared fixedly at Ye Qingyu, his lips twitching several times.

He deeply breathed in a mouthful of air. Forcefully activating the martial heart he had cultivated for tens of years, he suppressed the urge to slaughter this scum into pulp, then said in ridicule: “What is it? Little fellow, do you regret staying behind?”

Ye Qingyu swept his gaze over him, saying in rage: “What’s the use of me regretting? You’re so fierce. Even if Mister Liu hesitates, the ultimate result will still be that I stay behind?”

“You can really let go of your grievances.” Yan Buhui used a gaze similar to a cat catching a mouse, regarding him in an undisguised fashion.

Ye Qingyu did not pay attention to him. His gaze flickered around, evaluating his surrounding environment. He had an expression that he was currently planning something.

Chapter 160 – See you

“You don’t need to waste your efforts. My yuan qi space domain is a thousand metres in range. You cannot escape at all.”

“A thousand metres?” Ye Qingyu smiled a little, nodding his head roguishly. His gaze kept flickering about. With his arms crossed, he regarded the opposing party. “Fine, it seems I really can’t escape.....Let’s speak of the proper matter, why must you have me stay? Could it be that it was because of my peerless martial talent, is really like the will o wisp in a gloomy cemetery that cannot be hidden? It’s been discovered by just one glance by you..... “

A will o wisp in a cemetery?

Jsut what kind of nonsensical analogy was this?

“Young man, be more serious. If you continue using such a tone to speak to me like this, I will kill you.”

The expression of Yan Buhui became icy cold.

In that instant, the surrounding yuan qi seemed to consolidate. A coldness that seeped into one’s bones spread throughout the air.

He had truly been angered.

Because he was able to tell, that what was hidden behind the laughter

and chuckle of Ye Qingyu was a heart that did not fear him in the slightest.

In these past tens of years, Yan Buhui had seen far too many people that thought themselves as brave and heroic. But the large majority of these people were forcefully faking it. They were just showing strength on the outside but weak on the inside. Just a look at them was enough to make someone laugh and feel disgusted. But Ye Qingyu was not afraid. Not only was he not afraid, he held a mockery and disdain that he did not hide at all.

“Fine, no need to be so fearsome.” Ye Qingyu lifted both of his hands. “I’ll be serious then. You’ve specially wanted me to stay behind, just what do you want from me?”

Yan Buhui deeply breathed in.

He did his best to control his killing intent.

Even he did not know why, but when in front of this youth, his emotions could not help but be affected. But he was finally able to control and suppress his killing intent. Staring at Ye Qingyu, he said word by word :”Follow me, I won’t kill you.”

Ye Qingyu let out a snort. “After half the day, you really want me to surrender.”

Yan Buhui did not say anything.

He was waiting for Ye Qingyu's reply.

“Eh, to speak the truth, you have spent all these years alone among the demon race, do you not feel lonely and isolated? Therefore you wanted to find a person to follow you?” There was a nosy expression on Ye Qingyu's face, and he said jokingly: “But I am a man. Why can't you find a woman to follow you?”

In the pupils of Yan Buhui, killing intent and cleverness flickered past.

But he instantly began to smile.

“I was nearly angered by you.” He seriously evaluated Ye Qingyu up and down. Asking : “I'm really curious, just what kind of things do you possess that makes you will be able to escape from my hands?”

The smile on Ye qingyu's face instantly retreated.

“Eh, you were able to see this?”

The two people chattered away.

.....

.....

The formation airship swept past the arc of heaven like a ray of light.

In the blink of eye, the area controlled by the [Army of Youyan Pass] could be seen far away.

“Superior, are we really going to abandon patrolling envoy Ye?” Liu Zongyuan asked somewhat emotionally.

He turned his head to look back several times, as if he was going to witness a miracle and that fellow was going to catch up at any moment. But time and time again he was disappointed.

Mister Liu’s expression was calm: “What can we do apart from that?”

“But.....but.....” Liu Zongyuan said several buts, but ultimately he could not say anything.

Because he was clear in his heart, that under such conditions, apart from leaving behind Ye Qingyu, there was not any other choice. If they went against Yan Buhui’ will, not only would Ye Qingyu be unable to return, but everyone on the airship would also die. What was more important, was that those precious maps would also be lost. They had to choose the lesser of two evils. Abandoning Ye Qingyu, was absolutely the most logical choice.

“Ye Qingyu is not definitely going to die.” The Xinger who had not spoken, suddenly opened his mouth.

“Ah?” Liu Zongyuan was taken aback, then instantly said in a astonished tone: “Could it be that Xinger really thinks he is going to

surrender? I feel that he is not that type of person.”

Xinger smiled and shook his head. “Officer Liu, don’t be fooled that person. From my perspective, his final nonsensical words seems like he has gone crazy, but his motive is very simple. It is to make us not tarry any longer, to quickly leave from there. I feel that patrolling envoy Ye is using his own special method to hint at us to not worry about him, and that he has a method to handle Yan Buhui.....”

“How is this possible?” Liu Zongyuan exclaimed.

Even if his head was damaged, he would not think this was possible. That in front of a top class terrifying expert like Yan Buhui, the Ye Qingyu who was just at the Spirit spring stage would be able to escape.

There was a faint smile appearing on Mister Liu’s face. “An abnormal person, cannot be evaluated using a normal way of thinking. In the past I could not see through Yan Buhui, right now I similarly cannot see through Ye Qingyu. He thinks that he has a way to handle it. In truth, if you think carefully, just how many inexplicable matters has appeared on this child? I feel that Xinger’s words are correct. The stance and tone of patrolling envoy then was evidently telling us to quickly leave, and that he has a plan.”

Liu Zongyuan hearing this, could only shake his head with a bitter smile.

His concern had caused him to lose his composure. At that time he was really worried for Ye Qingyu, so he had not considered so much.

He only just understood, that the reason Mister Liu ordered the formation airship to leave was because of this point.

Liu Zongyuan turned his head to look back at the path they travelled for the last time.

“I hope that he can really return safely.”

He prayed in his heart.

.....

.....

“You intentionally said so much, is because you wanted to anger me. In reality, you wanted to buy time for Liu Yuqing and the others. You have confidence you can escape from me? But I really can’t see any way you can escape, unless.....” There was a suspicious expression on Yan Buhui’s face. “Unless you have an unlimiter divine talisman, otherwise it’s impossible. But just how precious is the unlimiter divine talisman. Furthermore, I completely cannot sense the existence or aura of the unlimited talisman on your body.”

“So the name of Mr Liu, is called Liu Yuqing. This is somewhat feminine.....you’ve guessed right.” Ye Qingyu smiled. “I really don’t have anything called the unlimited talisman.”

Yan Buhui nodded his head. “Then you.....”

Ye Qingyu let out a chuckle. “But you’re wrong about one thing. It is not only the unlimiter talisman that can break through your space formation.....have you heard of a thing called flash before?”

“Flash? What is it?” Yan Buhui was taken aback.

Ye Qingyu began to have a faint smile.

He laughed very happily.

Then his body slightly faced upwards. He waved at Yan Buhui in a confident and at ease fashion.

Xiu!

A pale silver coloured light flashed by on his body.

The next instant, Ye Qingyu had disappeared from his original position.

“What?” Yan Buhui was shaken.

At that instant, he did not sense the slightest trace of yuan qi fluctuation nor did he sense any power of formations. With his cultivation realm, with his experience and with his vision, he really could not see through just what kind of method Ye Qingyu used to disappear from his eyes. He could confirm, that this was not a concealment or

invisibility technique, Because not even a speck of dust could evade from his senses. But right now, he could not even sense Ye Qingyu's existence.

After huge shock, there was a shred of a smile on Yan Buhui's face.

“Interesting, really interesting. Who would have thought that such a person would appear in Youyan Pass.”

He smiled slightly, and did not chase after.

On one hand, the injuries he had sustained this was not light and the sealed space formation he had created, was in truth used to hide for the attacks of the [War God Youyan Pass] and the other experts of the human race. And on the other hand, Yan Buhui felt that even if he managed to catch up to this youth, he could not harden his resolve to kill him. Vaguely, Yan Buhui could already see a shadow of himself on Ye Qingyu.

Such an interesting fellow, was already very rare. If he killed him in just one stroke, would it not be such a waste?

Yan Buhui returned and lazily inclined back onto the white cloud.

“The wind will destroy the tree that grows higher than the forest. Ye Qingyu is it? I will see, just how long you can endure in Youyan Pass..... those treacherous hypocrites, when they witness the appearance of a genius that can threaten them, how can they remain indifferent? The things that happened to me in the past, most likely you will also experience. At that time, I will see, if you will still stand by their side so

determinedly like today. ahahahaahahah.....”

He closed his eyes.

A nap in ten years.

The heart sutra Yan Buhui cultivated in was called the [Great dream heart sutra].

.....

If Ye Qingyu knew that after he had escape, Yan Buhui did not have the intention to continue chasing, he would definitely curse and shout.

Because after activating the [Flash formation] in the [Titled Fiendgod chart], he had considered just where he could escape to so that Yan Buhui would not instantly discover him and catch up. There was a very long period of time needed to activate the [Flash formation] for the second time so he only had once chance. The direction he chose to flash, was not towards the Youyan Pass, nor was it back North.

He chose to go downwards, directly entering the [Snow dragon den].

The [Snow dragons] had extremely powerful and strong territorial perceptions. And their body was extremely tough, excavating a labyrinth underground that extended everywhere. It was filled with various types of dangers. Yan Buhui had also been injured so he would most likely not chase after into such an environment.

Of course, the most important point was that the Ye Qingyu who thought himself very clever reckoned that Yan Buhui would never imagine he would choose such a place to flee.

Xiu!

Flash ended.

Ye Qingyu appeared in a underground ice cave.

“I’ve really arrived at the [Snow dragon den]/“

He stabilised his mental state, carefully observing. He was able to sense, a rich and dense demonic qi surrounding the entire underground ice cave.

“This should be the demonic qi of the Snow dragons. These passages and caves like a mine, should be the traces left behind by the movement of the snow dragons through the ice. ” Ye Qingyu carefully observed his environment.

The environment was similar to the underground ice cave below the hundred broken mountains. It was just that the ice passageways curved and split even more, like an underground maze. The sensation it gave Ye Qingyu, was as if he had entered into a massive ant hive. Thankfully he did not encounter a hibernating snow dragon, otherwise the situation would be even more. Ye Qingyu guessed that this should be the outer territory of the snow dragon’s den, therefore he could not see the

hibernating snow dragons.

No matter what, this was far more hopeful than being in the hands of Yan Buhui.

“What I need to do next, is to think of a method to find the direction and utilise the holes and passages left by the snow dragons to directly travel to the southern border of the Explosive Snow glacier. However the underground passageways of the Snow dragon, is far more complicated and massive than what it seems like from far away.....Damn, I’ve really been pushed to the edge this time. I can only hope that the snow dragons are obediently sleeping away, and not to come out randomly. I am only passing by.....“

Ye Qingyu prayed in his heart.